

MUNPIA

명망

위

세계

심송 현대 판타지 소설

# 전지적 독자시점

# OMNISCIENT READER'S VIEWPOINT

– 전지적 독자 시점 –

- VOLUME 3 -

-AUTHOR-  
Sing-Shong

[ Rainbow Turtle Translations ]

# Chapter 59

## War of Kings (1)

My plan was clear.

The 1st Apostle, the plagiarist, had information about the 'third and fourth regressions' that were the beginning of Ways of Survival. As was always the case with informed people, he monopolized information and hid it from the prophets.

On the other hand, the Tyrant King was one of Seoul's Seven Kings who used the 'revelations' after knowing about the existence of the prophets.

The guy who wanted to monopolize information and the guy who tried to dig it out. It was obvious what would happen if the two of them faced each other.

Lee Sungkook asked, "...Then you are going to make a novel text?"

"That's right."

The plan itself was simple. We would make a text of the plagiarized writer's novel. Then spread it among the people of each station.

Well, it was roughly this type of feeling.

*–Some of the prophets' revelations have been leaked!*

The finish was laid out well.

Thanks to Han Donghoon's Internet comments manipulation, information on the prophets had already spread on the Internet. If the leaking of a txt version was known, there would be a big ripple.

A few early readers would try to get a hidden piece while the Tyrant King would naturally move to obtain them.

"But... I have forgotten most of the contents of SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor. How

will we make the text?”

“Why do we need the contents of the plagiarized novel?”

“Huh?”

“We remember the original.”

“Ah...!”

There was a short cry of admiration. However, Jung Minseob’s face was still dark.

“Eh... there is still a problem. The hidden pieces that we know about in Ways of Survival have been mostly used...”

“I will give you information in hidden pieces. I know a few that are present in the beginning. I will release information on items of the right level.”

Above all, it had to catch the eye of the plagiarist writer and the Tyrant King.

Lee Sungkook laughed awkwardly. “This is funny. I will make a text version. I am usually just a reader.”

This jerk... was he an illegal downloader?

Jung Minseob also spoke.

“But if we do this, won’t we be the same as him? In the end, we are plagiarizing the original story to make a story...”

It made sense. I thought for a moment before saying.

“There is such a thing. Plagiarism is about not wanting you to know the original, a parody is more fun if you know the original while a homage wants you to know the original.”

“Oh, this is interesting.”

“From now on, we will be making a homage.”

It was true. I hoped that many people would come to know SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor. That way he would be quickly ruined.

We borrowed a laptop from Gong Pildu and started typing. We didn't have a lot of experience in writing novels so we had to put our heads together. Jung Minseob pulled his hair and said,

"Writing is so difficult... writers are great..."

"Just write roughly. We just need information that will attract them. Rather, an imperfect revelation might be easier to deceive the prophets. Mix the truth and lies."

I watched what Jung Minseob typed and added some information.

"Let's change the names of the people in the novel. I am a bit anxious."

Lee Hyunsung and Lee Jihye would be shocked about being characters in the story. Whether I liked it or not, someday they would find out that this world was a 'novel'. But it didn't have to be right now.

Then Jung Minseob unexpectedly said, "Well, I don't think you need to worry about that part."

"Huh?"

"In fact, I tried to test some people by saying that this was a novel. But they didn't understand it at all. It is like a NPC... No matter how serious I am, they just take it as a joke."

It was an unexpected piece of information.

Jung Minseob and the other apostles had spoken to characters several times about them being 'supporting actors.' Thinking about the reactions of the characters at the time... there was definitely something strange.

Jung Minseob continued to speak.

"This was how the 1st Apostle was able to easily find the prophets. The 'characters' were very displeased by the words 'this is a novel' or they didn't listen. Perhaps this was why the apostles used the term 'revelation.'"

I suddenly felt uneasy when I heard this. I opened my mouth. "...What is the difference between the characters and us?"

"Huh? Um... we are people in reality and characters are people in novels? Isn't that the difference?"

"Then... when was this world divided into reality and a novel?"

"Hrmmm, well... When the first scenario started?"

My question wasn't resolved with Jung Minseob's answer.

Jung Minseob and Lee Sungkook were obviously outsiders of the novel like me. It was because I couldn't see their information at first.

But not long after, it was updated and I was able to look at their information in Character List.

Then were they now 'real people' or were they 'characters?' If everyone became a character over time...

I looked at Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung for a moment.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

[Currently collecting information about the corresponding figure.]

Fortunately, I still couldn't see the information for both of them.

Yoo Sangah suddenly looked back at me and smiled. Lee Gilyoung also looked at me.

"What is it Hyung?"

"It is nothing."

I didn't know why but I felt strangely relieved.

Soon after, we approximately completed the novel.

The quality was so bad that if it was serialized in Textpia, it would've bombed. But that didn't matter right ow.

"Let's first sprinkle the information that the Book of Revelations has been leaked."

Lee Sungkook asked.

"Is there enough time to spread the information?"

"Donghun will take care of it. If we take advantage of the Hermit Invalid, it can be spread in a short amount of time."

"Oh, Donghu... I see. But what if not all stations are capable of the Internet?"

"Then we will send someone."

I looked behind me. Kang Ilhun nodded as if he had been waiting.

Lee Sungkook agreed. "Ah, that's right. If it is Ilhun-ssi... I had forgotten."

"Kang Ilhun-ssi, are you ready?"

Kang Ilhun, the deputy of Dongdaemun. It was worth intentionally saving this guy.

Kang Ilhun nervously opened his mouth. "Leave it to me. I am confident that I can catch them. I just need to spread rumours?"

[The character 'Kang Ilhun' will follow your will.]

[Your understanding of this person has increased.]

Kang Ilhun. It was finally time to use the attribute of Rumours Expert. The time remaining until the scenario ended was 44 hours.

The next day, the game would begin.



*–Donghun, thank you.*

*–I am just paying you back so don't worry.*

[The character 'Han Donghoon' trusts you a little bit.]

Since last time, 'Hermit King of Shadows' Han Donghoon had moderately opened up his heart to me. The fact that I saved him from the prophets seemed to have played a bigger role than expected.

*–I feel a strange sense of familiarity with you.*

*–Familiarity?*

*–Since a long time ago... are you also a hermit?*

*–Um, no I wasn't. Although I was a bit timid.*

*–I see. I feel an unknown wall with Hyung. I can't explain it well but I like the feeling.*

*–Isn't it usually bad to feel a wall?*

*–I only believe in people with walls. In order to understand someone, I think I should face that wall first.*

A person who was barely 17 years old was speaking like a wise man.

In any case, the wall. I was sure that he was right. Some walls couldn't be crossed no matter how desperate the person.

*–In any case, the rumour has spread. But how will you sow the revelations? On the Internet again?*

*–No, the wrong people will read it if I place it on the Internet. I will sell it.*

*–Sell it? How?*

I started to explain to Han Donghoon.



There were 40 hours remaining until the end of the scenario.

I finally summoned the Chungmuro group members.

“This journey won’t be easy. If we can’t take Changsin Station in the next 40 hours, our group will be wiped out. However, our current forces isn’t enough.”

“Well, since when has it been easy? Who is the opponent?”

I replied to Jung Heewon’s question. “He is called the Tyrant King. He is one of the top seven kings of Seoul and the king with the largest territory.”

Lee Hyunsung asked this time. “What type of person is he?”

“He is someone who started from Dobong-gu and built his own kingdom. He says that any beautiful or handsome man and woman will become concubines, while any ugly people will be killed or become slaves.”

Jung Heewon frowned. “If Dokja-ssi is caught, you will become a slave.”

“...Well, I think it will be dangerous for Heewon-ssi.”

“Being a concubine is difficult... Why don’t we just go ahead and kill him?”

“It will be hard because his sponsor is quite strong. Now there are two paths. Take his flag or take over his headquarters, Dobong Station.”

Neither was easy, causing everyone to feel tense. I decided to get to the point.

“We will go to Gwanghwamun.”

“Huh? Didn’t you say not to fight them?”

“They will come to us.”

“Why?”

“I leaked a bit of information. We have to consider the time he moves so we will leave

soon. Everyone should be prepared... eh?"

"...What is it?"

I subtly smiled at Yoo Sangah's question.

"Nothing. It is just happening faster than I expected."

Han Donghoon's message appeared on my smartphone.

*–I was able to put it on the exchange. But is it okay?*

*–Yes, its fine. Well done.*

Then system messages entered my ears one after another.

[The items on the exchange have been sold.]

[The items on the exchange have been sold.]

At that moment, a trembling voice was heard from the air.

[...Are you a scammer?]

'What is the reaction among the constellations?'

[They are really excited. The filtering limit has started to unravel... there are those who gave it as gifts to their incarnations. But if you do this, you will receive attention again. Will you be okay? And if you release all the information you know, won't it go against you?]

'It isn't disadvantageous.'

I still had information remaining. The information I released wasn't information I needed. Rather, it was information that would be damaging to someone.

'Give me the coins.'

[Here.]

[16 volumes of SSSSS grade Infinite Regressors have been sold on the exchange.]

[You have earned 16,000 coins.]

Of course, I didn't release the information for free.

Anyone who needed to information would have a sponsor, so it was better to sell it on the 'exchange' than to release it for free on the Internet.

If I released the Book of Revelations for free, it would be more suspicious. But what if I sold it?

Of course they would buy it. It was because they would mistakenly think the information had 'value.' The quality of the information was sometimes determined by value rather than content.

By the way, it was 16,000 coins. This was a profit.

I spoke to the people. "I'm sorry but I will sleep for a while."

"...Aren't you taking it too easy?"

"I also need to sleep."

I lay down. Yoo Sangah covered me with a thin blanket. Jung Heewon still found it absurd.

Then I fell asleep. After a while, a system message was heard in my blurred consciousness.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3 has been activated!]

So far, I figured out that Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint was divided into three stages.

Stage 1 allowed me to read the simple actions or emotions of characters.

Stage 2 allowed me to see deep inside the character.

Stage 3 allowed me to see the surrounding scenery where the characters were located or directly immerse myself in the character.

So far, I had entered stage 3 twice. Once was in my dream and the second time was when I died. In my dream, I saw Yoo Jonghyuk leaving Gumho Station. When I was

dead, I witnessed the scenery of Chungmuro.

These two incidents had similarities. My consciousness was muddled and unstable. But this wasn't the only condition to trigger stage 3.

There was one important fact. It was...

{‘Representative-nim, are you watching? Damn... is this right?’}

Kang Ilhun muttered to himself as he gazed into the air.

‘I have spread it to the King of Tyrants. Those guys will move soon. By the way, you are listening to me right?’}

The character and I needed to be thinking about each other at the same time.

After a while, my point of view shifted to Kang Ilhun.

{The man smiled, revealing his white teeth. A man wearing a magnificent crown and a coat of gold slowly rose from the throne, women surrounding him.

“A new revelation?”

“It is certain. I bought the information using coins.”

“Who released the information?”

“It is probably one of the prophets.”

“Is it reliable?”

“I checked some of the hidden pieces in the revelations and they were all true.”

The man laughed, revealing his teeth.

“Let’s go to Gwanghwamun. Before the others get there first.”}

Good. The Tyrant King was finally moving. Now the problem was on the other side.

I thought about Jung Minseob.

{*Representative-nim!* I have arrived.}

The timing was good.

Jung Minseob was at Sejong University and heading to Gwanghwamun in advance. He then looked at the surrounding scenery.

{I am certain since he is wearing the same hood like a chunni. It is him.}

People were in the lower part of the building. As I thought, the plagiarist was the fastest. Gwanghwamun contained one of the hidden pieces most useful for the third regression. The plagiarist wouldn't be able to run away from this place.

{The problem is that more people are coming. Yeongdeungpo, Yongsan, Seongdong-gu, the kings on those sides are moving... isn't this becoming too big?}

No, it was what I was hoping for. The people who were hiding started to emerge one by one. It was better since I didn't need to visit each one individually.

Finally, the fourth scenario was ending. The real War of Kings would begin.

# Chapter 60

## War of Kings (2)

My consciousness rose silently and my senses slowly returned to reality.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3 has ended.]

The third stage was more tiring than I thought and I couldn't maintain it for long.

In addition, I found out one more thing that I regretted.

It was that using Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3 wouldn't always result in gaining a skill. It seemed to be a reward that could be obtained by entering the 1st person protagonist's point of view. Unfortunate, I didn't know the entry requirements.

It would be great if I could get Yoo Jonghyuk's skills every time I fell asleep and used 1st person protagonist's point of view.

I opened my eyes and saw Jung Heewon watching me.

"You were talking in your sleep again."

Talking? No way.

"What did I say?"

"It sounded like... Mother."

"...Mother?"

Why was I saying that to myself? It was hard to know if this was the truth or not.

Jung Heewon just looked at me with a mysterious smile.

I gave a cursory reply.

“Well, I’m not really worried about my mother. Rather, I have a request for Jung Heewon-ssi.”

“What is it?”

“Heewon-ssi, please don’t participate in the Gwanghwamun battle this time.”

“...Why?”

“There is something else you need to do. I can only entrust Heewon-ssi with it.”

Jung Heewon licked her lips like she couldn’t believe me.

“I will try. What is it?”



The first thing I did after conversing with Jung Heewon was to decide who would stay in Chungmuro and who would go to Gwanghwamun.

“Jung Heewon-ssi has a mission and I will decide the rest of the people remaining in Chungmuro.”

The other members gulped. They looked like vassals about to be chosen by the king.

“First of all, Gong Pildu and Lee Hyunsung will stay behind.”

“Bah, I am just your slave.”

Gong Pildu scoffed like he already expected it. The problem was Lee Hyunsung. The slightly pale face was troubled, as if he had somehow missed out on a promotion.

“Hyunsung-ssi must remain. I need someone to protect this place with Gong Pildu-ssi. Hyunsung-ssi can protect Chungmuro and lead the people as well as Yoo Sangah-ssi.”

“...Yes. I understand.”

His expression was somewhat sad but he had no choice. There was a reason for leaving the Steel Sword behind.



“Hyunsung-ssi already has great skills. The problem is that the skill levels are too low. While we are gone, Hyunsung-ssi should increase the proficiency of Great Mountain Smash. Hyunsung-ssi’s help will be needed after the end of this scenario.”

Lee Hyunsung’s face brightened slightly.

“Yep! Please leave it to me.”

Soldiers were the most efficient when following commands and when they had a routine.

Thus, we embarked on the journey to Gwanghwamun. Apart from Lee Jihye and Yoo Jonghyuk who were impossible to control, the core members were Yoo Sangah, Lee Gilyoung and Lee Sungkook.

The Chungmuro group members waved as they watched us leave.

“Deputy-nim! Come back safely!”

“You must be safe!”

For a few days now, Yoo Sangah’s popularity had pierced the sky. Yoo Sangah only led the people for a short amount of time but everyone was concerned about her. However, Yoo Sangah looked uneasy.

“Dokja-ssi, will I be a help to you?”

Her self-deprecation had returned. I had to say it this time, even if she would be hurt.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi. You will be disruptive if you keep acting like this.”

“Yes...”

“Yoo Sangah-ssi is good enough. Would I take someone with me for no reason?”

“I believe in Dokja-ssi. But I can’t be as helpful to you as Heewon-ssi or Hyunsung-ssi...”

“The two of them can’t do what Yoo Sangah-ssi can do. Yoo Sangah-ssi is necessary for this plan.”

Yoo Sangah's expression slightly relaxed as it was emphasized once again. Yoo Sangah was an exceptionally talented person. She just needed confidence.

"Didn't you study Korean history before?"

"Ah, yes."

Yoo Sangah's expression became brighter once mentions of the past emerged. But it was only for a moment as she quickly became grouchy again.

"...It is useless now."

"It isn't useless. This is why I brought Yoo Sangah-ssi along."

Originally, I hadn't intended to give this role to Yoo Sangah. There was a suitable person if I went down to Gwangjin-gu. However, I didn't have time to look for him so Yoo Sangah would have to be enough.

The Yoo Sangah that I knew was smart enough to memorize the entire history of South Korea just to get a first grade degree in Korean history.

"Do you remember the statue of Samyeongdang last time?"

"Yes."

"There will be many similar things on the way to Gwanghwamun. There is the National Museum and several statues.

Yoo Sangah shouted once she realized what I was saying.

"Ah! I see. That reminds me, the power of the constellations can remain in relics or remnants of themselves."

"Yes, Yoo Sangah-ssi's mission is to find such keepsakes or relics."

"I understand! I will use my head."

"There are some famous people but the more unknown they are, the better."

Despite being on the same level, a constellation's strength varied according to their

popularity.

It could be seen in the difference between Samyeongdang and Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.

The items left behind by Samyeongdang were B grade, while the sword left by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare had the quality to be S-grade.

“We need to gather as much items on the way to Gwanghwamun as possible. Our side has a relatively small number of people.”

Perhaps the Tyrant King had come with hundreds of incarnations. The plagiarist would have his own forces. I also needed to be careful of the kings who came from Yeongdeungpo, Yongsan and Seongdong-gu.

The latter part of the fourth scenario was just like a proxy war for the constellations. At the end of this scenario, an event greatly coveted by the constellations was hiding.

Unlike before, the incarnations would have a high coordination with their constellations and the risks would increase accordingly. Since many constellations were determined by the history of their lives, Yoo Sangah who knew history would be useful in many ways in this scenario.

Yoo Sangah suddenly clapped.

“Ah, that reminds me of a place.”

“Huh?”

“I’m not sure if I’m remembering correctly but... there will probably be Gwangsengmyo Shrine near here.”

“Gwangsengmyo?”

“Yes, it is on the way and the power of a great person might be there. He isn’t South Korean but...”

Not South Korean? I was a reader of Ways of Survival and I had never heard of Gwangsengmyo.

In any case, we decided to move according to Yoo Sangah. We walked for a while.

The first one who screamed was Lee Sungkook. “Eh, is that it?”

There really was an old shrine nearby. The Gwangsengmyo shrine. There was a place like this in the middle of the city?

I read the description and was even more surprised. Huh, it was this person? It was an unexpected figure.

It was a shrine for one of the best Chinese god of war.

Yoo Sangah asked with a tense expression.

“Now what...?”

I looked around. An idol couldn’t be seen.

“Let’s pray.”

This was different from Samyeongdang. I wouldn’t always be able to get a good reward for destroying the idol.

We collected water from the shrine and prayed quietly. Some time passed. Then a system message was heard.

[This shrine has been neglected for a long time.]

[A constellation who loves gaundaos is pleased.]

[A constellation who loves gundaos has revealed his modifier.]

[The constellation ‘Lord of the Beautiful Beard, Marquis Zhuangmou’ has blessed you.]

Lord of the Beautiful Beard, Marquis Zhuangmou. He was Chinese but he was a great person almost everyone in South Korean knew.

It was because this constellation was Guan Yu from Romance of the Three Kingdoms.

[The constellation’s blessing increases your strength and physique by 5 for the next 24 hours.]

Lee Sungkook turned rosy like a flower.

“Crazy... Representative-nim, isn’t this a complete jackpot?”

“It is a decent start.”

I didn’t know why there was a shrine for Guan Yu in Seoul but it shouldn’t be strange when there was a shrine for the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare in Japan. Guan Yu was world famous, just like the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.

“I guess it is hard to get an item from here.”

“It would’ve been nice to get something like a guandao...”

He was a great person of China. Even if there was an idol, it didn’t mean a good item would appear in South Korea. It was more likely that an incarnation of China had obtained it...

He couldn’t be compared to the Great Sage the Equal of Heaven or Uriel, but he wouldn’t lose when it came to the Chinese constellations.

Lee Gilyoung grabbed my collar.

“Hyung.”

The cockroach’s antennae was moving wildly. I had a bad hunch and saw a group walking in the distance. There were approximately 50 people.

I used Calm Observation and saw that their average physical body stats were around level 40. It was lacking compared to the apostles, but it was still enough to call them elites.

A warlord with 50 elites.

Lee Sungkook muttered, “That armour, somewhere...”

The historical clothing reminded me of a museum gallery. I looked at the members and they were all handsome men.

Lee Sungkook muttered, “Isn’t that Hwang Sungmin in the first row? He seems to be an entertainer?”

Anyone who saw it would think it was a historical drama filming but bloodthirst was coming from them. A man came forward and pointed his spear towards me.

“Who is blocking the way of the king?”

“Who are you?”

I guessed but I still asked. I thought I would meet this person later but the timing was faster than expected.

A woman’s voice was heard from among the group of men.

“That brown flag... are you also a king?”

“...So what?”

“I didn’t think there would be a king in Jung-gu. It is amazing.”

Her voice was like petals blowing in the spring breeze. It was a stage voice.

I replied, “Kings are now common in this world.”

“A king might be common but not just anyone can become king. Everyone, open the path!”

The retainers moved in unison and a woman dressed in a royal costume appeared in the centre of the ranks. Her hair was raised in an elegant manner. She was a stunning beauty that could easily be the heroine of a historical drama.

“A-Are you Min Jiwon?”

Lee Sungkook stuttered. The woman laughed.

“You recognize me?”

“I am a fan!”

Lee Sungkook stepped forward in a spellbound manner. Fool. The Hypnotist was being bewitched first?

[The exclusive skill 'Permanent Lv. 2' is activated.]

I used it the moment I met Lee Sungkook's eyes.

"I-I-I'm sorry."

The woman's eyes narrowed.

By the way, it was interesting. Lee Sungkook recognized the name Min Jiwon like she was a person who actually existed.

...One of the Seven Kings of Seoul, the King of Beauty was a real person?

I felt a bit strange. It was because the real name of the King of Beauty in Ways of Survival was 'Min Jiwon'.

Was it just a coincidence? I should check it out.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

Fortunately, the skill was activated safely.

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Min Jiwon

**Age:** 26 years old

**Constellation Support:** Lady of the Brocade Sleep

**Private Attribute:** Actor (Rare), King of Beauty (Hero)

**Exclusive skills:** Weapons Training Lv. 5, Military Command Lv. 2, Love Affair Demon Lv. 4, Skin Correction Lv. 1, A Thousand Faces Lv. 3, Acting Lv. 2...

**Stigma:** Heavenly Charm Lv. 4, Unique Heroine Lv. 3

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 18, Strength Lv. 18, Agility Lv. 21, Magic Power Lv. 23.

**Overall Evaluation:** An incarnation with an excellent sponsor behind her. Her wonderful beauty will shine even more with the backing of her sponsor. Her army will only be loyal to her unless her beauty fades.

As expected, she was the King of Beauty in the original Ways of Survival.

Looking at Character List, she didn't seem to be a real person... then how did Lee Sungkook know her?



Did it have something to do with Lee Sungkook's entry in the Character List?

I bowed my head once.

"Min Jiwon-ssi, it is an honour to meet you."

"...Are you also my fan?"

Fan...

She had an outstanding beauty but it wasn't my style. Looking objectively, Yoo Sangah was just as beautiful as her. Lee Sungkook was spellbound due to the unique skill this woman possessed.

I deliberately spoke like I was in a historical drama.

"I'm not a fan. But do you know him? Seongdong-gu's king."

Min Jiwon's expression hardened.

"You...?"

Lady of the Brocade Sleep.

There was only one constellation with such distinctive features in all of Ways of Survival.

"It looks like you have a very high degree of sympathy with your sponsor. Please tell this to your sponsor. It is an honour to meet the last queen of Silla."

Lady of the Brocade Sleep. This was the title for the last queen of Shilla, Queen Jinseong.

[The sponsor behind 'Min Jiwon' is greatly shaken.]

"Don't panic. Didn't you come to realize Silla's wish?"

It sometimes happened like this. The coordination between sponsor and incarnation was overturned. The sponsor would force their unfulfilled wish onto their incarnation.

It was a mistake often made by the senior constellations. There was a possibility of being destroyed by the posthumous storm.

Min Jiwon narrowed her eyes.

“You...”

Now according to the development of Ways of Survival, the three areas of Seongdong-gu, Yongsan-gu and Yeongdeungpo-gu were fighting fiercely.

Just like the old days on the Korean peninsula. Then a message popped up.

[A bounty scenario has occurred!]

Huh? Bounty?

+

[Bounty Scenario – Unification of the Three Kingdoms]

**Category:** Bounty

**Difficulty:** ???

**Clear Conditions:** The great people of Silla want the incarnation of Silla, ‘Min Jiwon’ to become king of the three regions. Help incarnation ‘Min Jiwon’ and kill the kings who have the backgrounds of Later Baekje and Taebong. If this scenario succeeds, you will gain the favour of the constellation, Lady of the Brocade Sleep.

**Time Limit:** 38 hours

**Compensation:** 2,000 coins.

**Failure:** —

+

I stared at the scenario window blankly while Min Jiwon sent me a coquettish smile.

“My sponsor wants to see your sincerity. Won’t you accept? I won’t speak much longer. Become my subordinate.”

She spoke in such a domineering tone despite only offering 2,000 coins. I couldn’t help smiling. This sponsor was completely seeing me as a poor person.

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ dislikes the sponsor of ‘Min Jiwon’.]

[The constellation ‘Secretive Plotter’ is laughing at the constellation.]

[2,000 coins have been sponsored.]

[5 volumes of Revelation – SSSSS grade Infinite Regressor have been sold on the exchange.]

[You have obtained 5,000 coins as compensation.]

I was curious about what this woman would look like if she heard the messages that I was hearing right now.

What did she want me to do for 2,000 coins?

# Chapter 61

## War of Kings (3)

[The constellation 'Lady of the Brocade Sleep' is waiting for your response.]

I shrugged towards the confident Min Jiwon and replied, "I don't want to."

Min Jiwon's eyes shook violently. Some of the men opened their mouths and even the actor Min Jiwon couldn't control her face. She spoke in a dumbfounded voice.

"...Huh?" Rather than accepting the given reality, she chose to doubt her hearing. "I think I heard wrong... can you tell me again?"

"I don't want to be your underling."

It was laughable to become her subordinate for only 2,000 coins. I spoke to my party members waiting behind me. "Let's go. We have to hurry."

We turned around without hesitation and Min Jiwon shouted in an urgent voice.

"Wait a minute! I can give more coins if it is lacking. I can talk to my sponsor—"

"There is no need."

"I said to wait!" She ran urgently and blocked my way. It was a rather quick movement compared to her agility level. "Don't you know the value of 2,000 coins?"

Didn't she know? I could easily get a few bursts of 2,000 coins.

Min Jiwon spoke with narrowed eyes. "Can you afford to pretend like this?"

"...Pretending?"

"The war between the three kingdoms will soon begin. I don't know who your sponsor is but the small and medium groups in the area will be cleaned up. Honestly, it isn't enough that you didn't accept the 2,000 coins. But is it possible that you haven't

figured it out yet? I am the king of Silla. The king who will soon unify the three kingdoms!”

She seemed to lose sight of reality as she became immersed in her acting. Well, Min Jiwon was originally like this.

She was an excellent actress and due to her deep sympathy with ‘Queen Jinseong’, she would live thinking that she really was the last queen of Silla.

This was why method acting was scary.

“It seems you are mistaken about something. This isn’t the age of the Later Three Kingdoms.”

“You are the one who is mistaken about the era. The Republic of South Korea is over. Are you still waiting for rescue?” She suddenly started speaking bullshit. “A new era has opened. The beginning of this era will start with me, Min Jiwon.”

I was mistaken. This type of nonsense sounded plausible when placed in this context. I was worried about how to separate from this woman when Yoo Sangah handled it for me.

“Q-Queen-nim?”

“What?”

“As far as I know... Silla is the weakest country in the Later Three Kingdoms... won’t it be hard based on the history? The one who unified the Three Kingdoms...”

Min Jiwon paled from the surprise attack.

“W-What do you know?”

“I... have a 1st grade degree in Korean history.”

“1-1st grade Korean history...” The embarrassed Min Jiwon stuttered. “What is so great about 1st grade Korean history?”

“Let’s go Yoo Sangah-ssi. She doesn’t know history very well.”

Min Jiwon's words became redder at my words.

"Just wait! My proposal isn't over yet. How about 3,000 coins?"

I turned around without saying anything.

"3,500 coins! I'll give you 3,500!"

It was only increased by 500. Now I knew the scale of the queen's capital. As expected, the constellations had different levels of wealth according to their popularity.

I ignored her and kept walking.

"3,600, no 3,700...!"

My footsteps stopped. I looked back and saw Min Jiwon making a 'that's right' expression.

I was also a bad guy. I could just walk away but I wanted to smash it. I opened my mouth and spoke in a blunt voice. "Rather, I want to make you an offer."

"What do you mean?"

"10,000, how about it?"

"...10,000?"

"Oh, is it too low? You are a king... then I will make it 20,000."

Min Jiwon's expression hardened. She glared at me.

"Are you joking with me right now? 20,000 coins? I don't think you are worth that much..."

"No, I mean that I will buy you for 20,000 coins."

"Huh?"

"To be exact, you and all your troops."

Her mouth dropped open in a daze before she barely regained her senses.

“Y-You don’t have that many coins.”

“I wonder what you will say when I show you this.”

I pressed my index finger and thumb together. Then at the end of my index finger, the part of my coins showed up.

[20,000 coins.]

Min Jiwon’s barely maintained poker face finally collapsed.

“T-This is ridiculous!”

“Do you believe me now?”

It didn’t take long for distrust to turn to astonishment, astonishment to turn into greed.

It was natural. 20,000 coins was a truly huge amount. It was an amount that could affect the dominance of the three forces in the Later Three Kingdoms.

Unfortunately, greed couldn’t break her pride.

“Are you trying to buy me with money?”

“Why? Is it impossible? You are the one who made the proposal first.”

The leader of her subordinates came forward.

“You dare!”

He had a slender body and was very handsome. He didn’t seem to have much muscles but they were hidden. Yoo Sangah said, “Dokja-ssi, this man...”

I realized it the moment Yoo Sangah spoke. Yes, Silla had this constellation.

Silla wasn’t at an absolutely disadvantage in the war between the three kingdoms. Looking at the era, there were quite a few competent people.

For example, Kim Yushin or... the problem was that there was no Kim Yushin in the



current Silla period.

“Gwanchang is a good constellation. But he is rash. What if my constellation was Gyebaek? I don’t think you want to reproduced the battle of Huangshanbeol.” (*Gyebaek= general from Baekje. Battle of Hwangsanbeol*)

The confused man’s eyes widened.

“You... are you from Baekje?”

[The constellation ‘Hwarang Knows No Retreat’ is angry at your comments.]

(*TL: Hwarang= elite youth corps of Silla*).

This person truly was his sponsor.

Hwarang Knows No Retreat, Gwanchang. His stigma wasn’t that great but his loyalty to the fallen kingdom was wonderful.

“I’m not from Baekje. I’m an ordinary South Korean person.”

“This guy!”

“I respect your patriotism but you should be more prudent. I don’t have only 20,000 coins.”

I moved my fingers one more time and the number of coins started to rise. The man’s face started turning pale.

Wealth was an object of desire for the poor. However, overwhelming wealth caused reverence and fear. Especially for those who were familiar with the power of ‘coins.’

Min Jiwon, who had been frozen for a while, belatedly opened her mouth. “You... who are you?”

She asked me too soon. I naturally had no intention of answering.

“Min Jiwon-ssi, you can’t solve everything in the world with money. I thought you would know this since you are an actor. I’m disappointed.”

I finally turned around and started leaving. The party members followed me as I heard Min Jiwon's voice.

"W-Wait!"

However, she couldn't follow me anymore. Once we got a certain distance away from the Silla group, Yoo Sangah spoke in a slightly grouchy voice.

"Dokja-ssi, can I ask you something?"

"Yes."

"Is she a famous person?"

I hesitated for a moment at the unexpected question.

"Huh? Um... maybe?"

"I see. Dokja-ssi and Sungkook-ssi recognizes her... I used to watch a lot of historical dramas, why don't I remember her at all?"

This was why she was grumpy?

Lee Gilyoung interrupted. "Noona, I also don't know her."

"Ah, haha. I'm glad."

It wasn't a strange story. It was natural for Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung not to know 'Min Jiwon' if she only appeared in a novel.

The problem was Lee Sungkook.

"Lee Sungkook-ssi."

"Ah, yes."

Lee Sungkook responded from the rear of the group. Min Jiwon's beauty seemed quite impressive.

"I heard that you are a fan of Min Jiwon...?"

“Huh? Haha. That’s correct. Don’t you know? She is a famous actress... eh?”

Lee Sungkook’s expression became strange.

“Uh... Min Jiwon... ssi? Eh? Why do I know Min Jiwon? No, did I know her from the beginning...?”

I quietly activated Character List.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

**[Character Information]**

**Name:** Lee Sungkook

**Age:** 25 years old.

**Constellation Support:** Manager of the Old Ticker

**Private Attribute:** Hypnotist (Rare)

**Exclusive Skills:** Hypnosis Lv. 3, Bluff Lv. 4, Weapons Training Lv. 3, Detect Attributes Lv. 2...

**Stigma:** Comfortable Sleep Lv. 1

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 13, Strength Lv. 13, Agility Lv. 17, Magic Power Lv. 18.

**Overall Evaluation:** The current comprehensive evaluation is currently in progress.

+

It was the second time I saw Lee Sungkook’s information. Nothing had greatly changed, except for one thing. Lee Sungkook’s ‘9th to Get Off’ attribute had disappeared.

“Lee Sungkook-ssi?”

“Uhh... yes?”

“No, it is nothing.”

I stopped speaking in order to prevent confusion. In the world of Ways of Survival, an attribute only disappeared when the qualifications for that attribute weren’t met anymore.

All those who ‘got off’ knew the ‘future’ of this world. However, the future that Lee Sungkook knew was only near the prologue. The evolution of the current scenario

surpassed the information he knew.

Then a hypothesis emerged. Maybe all those who ‘got off’ would become simple characters the moment they caught up with the ‘future’ they knew?

It was still a leap, but it was a possible hypothesis. If this was the case, it was understandable that Lee Sungkook and Jung Minseob’s information started to be seen.

If it was like this...

Maybe one day I would also...?

[The character ‘Min Jiwon’ shows a weak liking towards you.]

...All my thoughts collapsed at this absurd message. I reflexively looked back. Min Jiwon was still standing still and looking this way. I couldn’t see her face but her gestures looked angry.

Then this message... no, wait a minute. Why did I forget that episode?

It suddenly came to mind. On the 11th regression, she had slapped Yoo Jonghyuk as soon as he met her. Then Min Jiwon supported him throughout that regression...

I suddenly had an ominous feeling. Perhaps... it couldn’t be?

At least I wasn’t hit on the cheek.



An hour later, we moved through the forest of buildings near Gwanghwamun as quickly as possible. I didn’t see any humans but it was clear that the kings who bought my text were hiding near here.

*–Pay attention to when they start to move. We will also move in time with them.*

I said to my party members while moving cautiously.

In any case, I knew the kings’ goals.

{The moment he reached the entrance of the National Palace Museum, his heart

started pounding. Most of the artifacts sleeping here were garbage. Only one of them was real.

The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

The strongest SSSSS grade item was hidden here in Gwanghwamun!}

I wrote it but my hands and feet curled up just reading the words.

It was true that the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was at the National Palace Museum.

Of course, the rating of the item wasn't SSSSS. In the first place, there was no such rating.

The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword boasted a great performance and in fact, Yoo Jonghyuk of the third regression also favoured this sword at the beginning.

*–Hyung, if there is such an item, shouldn't we get it first?*

*–There is no need.*

Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was a good sword but it wasn't a necessary item right now.

However, the plagiarist and other kings would think differently. They could get the best combat power at the beginning with the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword. They would surely be looking for the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

My plan was simple. Take the other artifacts while they were aiming for the sword.

The problem was when would those guys move? There was no need to worry about it in advance.

In this damn world, those guys always appeared when the scenario was stagnant.

[Huhu, this is really surprising. All the key people are gathered.]

It was as I expected. There were sparks and an intermediate dokkaebi appeared out of thin air.

[Shouldn't good children be awarded a prize?]

There was the sound of something started to rise from the centre of Gwanghwamun.

It was a single throne covered with a golden light.

There were gasps everywhere in Gwanghwamun. There wasn't an explanation yet but all the kings would've realized it at this moment.

Only a single king could take that throne.

[The main scenario has been updated!]

[Main scenario # 4 – The King's Qualifications has begun.]

# Chapter 62

## War of Kings (4)

Lee Sungkook was surprised by the system message and muttered.

“Another new scenario...”

It certainly wasn’t good timing. Another scenario appeared before we could complete the clear conditions of the existing scenario.

I opened up the new scenario as soon as it arrived.

+

[Main Scenario # 4 – The King’s Qualifications]

**Category:** Main

**Difficulty:** A

**Clear Conditions:** Occupy the ‘Absolute Throne’ located at Gwanghwamun.

**Time Limit:** 8 hours.

**Compensation:** 10,000 coins

**Failure:** —

\* This scenario can only be challenged by those who have completed the hidden scenario ‘King’s Road.’

\* The absolute king has absolute commands over all the other kings.

\* There are additional special clear conditions for this scenario.

+

The situation wasn’t good. Our group hadn’t been able to take the target of the Struggle for Flags yet.

The burden had doubled. I must complete the scenario related to the throne while taking down the Tyrant King and occupying Changsin Station.

The intermediate dokkaebi said.

[Look at your confused faces. Please don’t worry too much. This scenario will proceed slowly.]



Gwanghwamun was still despite everyone being in a state of agitation. It was natural. The surviving kings knew how important it was to listen to the dokkaebi.

[As you have guessed, the fourth main scenario is to be the only king to sit on the throne. Of course, being a king doesn't mean that everyone can sit on that throne. Only a person who has proved his/her qualifications can sit there.]

The intermediate dokkaebi said with a bad laugh.

[Then I will reveal the first qualification.]

+

[King's Qualification]

1. {The owner of the throne should be braver than anyone else.}

-The Absolute Throne never wants a 'weak king.' To challenge the throne, you must own at least a black flag.

(Additional qualifications will be released after a while.)

+

A black flag. It was disgusting from the very beginning.

[Huhu, the motive was given. Now make a fun story!]

The intermediate dokkaebi disappeared and Yoo Sangah made an anxious expression.

"If it is a black flag... you need to occupy 20 stations?"

"That's right."

Our group had a brown flag. It was a flag that could be obtained after occupying 10 stations.

"What do we do? In order to create a black flag, we need 10 more stations. If there are vacant stations nearby..."

"This is a condition that appeared because there are no empty stations."

"Huh?"

As far as I knew, no king had achieved the black flag at this point.

“Did you forget? There isn’t only one method to change the colour of a flag.

The achievement value of the flag went up when taking over a station. However, there was a way to get achievement values much faster.

“Ah...!”

It was to take the flag of another representative. Right now, there were a bunch of kings with flags in Gwanghwamun.

I calmed down the party members.

“Don’t worry. This wasn’t unexpected. We will proceed as planned.”

As planned. I said this but it wouldn’t be easy.

There were clouds of war hanging over Gwanghwamun. It was a breathless tension just before the storm blew. The sound of weapons being pulled out and the organization of battle lines could be heard.

People would soon start moving.

Those competing for a promotion would now kill each other with real swords. Those who wanted a wider territory would take each other’s flags to occupy more stations.

Kill each other and get better items. It was in order to survive.

Lee Sungkook watched the buildings around them and muttered in a surreal tone. “It is scary. Is this really South Korea?”

“It is South Korea. It is still South Korea.”

“Representative-nim, aren’t you scared?”

“I’m afraid.”

It wasn’t a lie. I was obviously scared. To be honest, I often felt that way. Even if I read Ways of Survival, I was still a regular office worker. I didn’t express it but I often wondered if I could survive.

Of course, my worries didn't last long. It was because it was useless to think about it. It was the same in any world.

Kim Dokja who worked at Mino Soft was now Kim Dokja who lived in the world of Ways of Survival. Death would come whether I wanted it to or not. The most important thing was...

"At least I feel like I am living right now."

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is activated!]

I suddenly turned around and saw Lee Sungkook looking at me with reverent eyes.

"When I look at Representative-nim..."

"Attack!"

Someone's shout was heard before Lee Sungkook's words were over. 300 metres away, there was a king who started marching north.

He was a king with a brown flag like me. I couldn't see his face because he was too far away but he was probably the king of a small district.

At almost the same time, the warlords hiding in Gwanghwamun started to appear. They were each armed with excellent self-defense equipment.

The most prominent one was a man wearing a kilt in splendid colours. I could tell who he was without looking.

Our target, the Tyrant King and the rule of Dobong-gu and Seongbuk-gu.

The vibe he gave off was new. The Tyrant King who had the largest forces among Seoul's Seven Kings. Now that he moved, the 1st apostle and the kings of the three kingdoms would act.

"Maybe most of them will go after the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword."

In fact, the direction of the kings' march was the northern Palace Museum where the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was located. I didn't see him but the plagiarist would also be moving to that side.

Some forces ignored any damage and were running towards the museum. It was understandable.

Since the qualifications of the absolute king wasn't clear yet, they thought it would be more advantageous to obtain a good item.

If the item was the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword, they could fill in the lacking achievement points of their flag at once.

Lee Sungkook asked anxiously, "Shouldn't we go? The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword is a pretty good item."

"We will just be defeated if we go."

We didn't have a lot of people. Moreover, there were many high level sponsors among them.

"Go to the west."

I moved while leading the party. All the kings were heading for the northern Palace Museum so the west was relatively lacking.

It was the historic Gwanghwamun so there were museums all over the place. Presseum, Korean Financial History Museum, Korean National Police Heritage Museum...

Yoo Sangah asked, "We aren't going to these places?"

"We should avoid the modern and contemporary exhibits."

An old relic was better.

Of course, the relic simply being 'old' wasn't enough. The hoe used by farmers in the Iron Age was also such an item but it was only F grade. The important thing was that it have a relationship with a famous person or a narrative.

"Let's go here."

The place we stopped at was the Seoul History Museum facing Gyeonghui Palace.

A light flashed in Yoo Sangah's eyes.

"What are we looking for here?"

"We must find the Ganpyeongui. It is a relic of the Joseon Dynasty that resembles a disc, but I don't know what floor it is on." (Ganpyeongui is an astronomical observation device. Image will be provided below)

"Okay, I will try and find it!"

"We have to find it quickly so let's scatter. Gilyoung, you move with Sangah noona. And Lee Sungkook-ssi—"

As I was speaking, something sharp flew from behind me. I reflexively crouched down, pulling the party members with me.

The exterior wall of the building was pierced by an arrow. There was a trace of magic power on the shaft.

I got goosebumps.

[Strong Magic Arrow].

This person had learnt the archery skill properly. Who was it? The unexpected ambush complicated my thoughts. Was there someone who read the movements of my party?

"Everybody go inside! Quickly!"

Several more arrows flew.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

I swung my sword and struck the flying arrows. Fortunately, the amount of magic power wasn't high so they weren't difficult to block.

The problem was the number. One arrow flew out and pierced my thigh. I quickly retreated and hid behind cover.

"Hahaha! Where is the novice king wandering to?"

A voice echoed through the area. A group of men armed with bows and swords appeared 500 metres away.

Their flag couldn't be seen. In other words, they sent out a detached force. Some kings were smarter than I thought. Was he going to eat up items while taking away the flags of the smaller kings?

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

I used a skill on a person in the lead.

+

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Chu Wangin

**Age:** 33 years old.

**Constellation Support:** The Last Hero of Hwangsanbeol

**Private Attribute:** Minor Actor (General)

**Exclusive Skills:** Weapons Training Lv. 4, Acting Lv. 1, Weak Investigation Lv. 1.

**Stigma:** Baekje Kendo Lv. 4, Prepared to Fight to the Death for the Country Lv. 2, Detached Force Management Lv. 3.

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 19, Strength Lv. 19, Agility Lv. 21, Magic Power Lv. 15.

**Overall Evaluation:** It is a case where even a nobody can grow if he meets an excellent sponsor. Due to the high degree of sympathy with the sponsor, the strength of his stigmas is significant.

+

Damn, a tiger had come. I didn't expect to meet Hwangsanbeol's master here. Those with actor attributes tended to cling to these types of constellations.

"If you know honour as a king, surrender your flag. Then your group members won't lose their lives."

The poor dramatic tone told me why he was only a minor actor. The Last Hero of Hwangsanbeol was attached to such a person. It seemed that bad luck with partners applied even to constellations.

But this was difficult. The level of the stigmas Baekje Kendo and Detached Force Management was too high.

Considering the number of people, it would be hard to handle all of them without

raising my overall stats.

[Coins Possessed: 68,150C]

...Should I use my coins here? However, the difficulty of the last phase of the fourth scenario would increase sharply if I used coins to raise my overall stats here.

It would disturb my whole plan.

If I closed my eyes and used around 20,000 coins...

“Isn’t it embarrassing for you to persecute the king of a weak nation using the name of the Three Kingdoms?”

I looked around as I heard a voice and saw a familiar person approaching. The incarnation of Gyebaek, Chu Wangin made a fierce expression.

“What is the queen doing here?”

“Your crude tone is just as expected for the master of a ruined kingdom.”

The woman shot back with a smug expression. King of Beauty Min Jiwon. Why did this woman appear here?

...Surely she hadn’t followed me?

No. There was no way.

Min Jiwon’s eyes glanced at me.

[The character ‘Min Jiwon’ shows a weak liking towards you.]

...Really?

“Shut up! The cowardly Silla blood now claims to be rule of the Three Kingdoms? I won’t recognize a girl like you as a king!”

Chu Wangin’s roar of anger burst from his body. He might be a minor actor without much skills but his voice was very loud.

By the way, it was interesting. Gyebaek and Queen Jinseong were born in different eras but they could face each other like this after becoming constellations.

I asked Min Jiwon, "Why are you helping me?"

"Silla doesn't ignore weak countries."

"It is Silla who destroyed Gaya."

"...Did you also have a 1st-grade degree in Korean history?"

"Any high school graduate would know this much."

Min Jiwon's expression became slightly gloomy.

"I don't know because I didn't go to high school."

It was natural. Min Jiwon had been an actor since her teens. She became an actress at an early age and learned things other than history.

"Your words are correct. I can't obtain people with money. I'm repaying the debt caused by my rudeness. That's it."

I knew Min Jiwon's history as an actress and could feel the sincerity in her words. It was still surprising. She was an incarnation with a high pride so I didn't think she would bow before me like this.

Gyebaek's incarnation laughed at our conversation.

"A king is swayed by personal matters? That's why a chick like you..."

Min Jiwon's captain came forward on behalf of the Hwarang.

"Rude! How can a man like you be the king of a country?"

Gyebaek's eyes were drawn to the Hwarang.

"Hwarang...? Very interesting. Did you sign with that constellation?"

The Hwarang captain turned red at the words. It reminded me that the Hwarang



captain's sponsor was Gwanchang.

"Do you want your neck to be cut like your sponsor?"

In the battle of Hwangsansbeol, Gwanchang died from Gyebaek cutting his throat.

"Shut up!"

Thank you for coming to help but the relationship between constellations was the worst. This was particularly bad due to their high level of sympathy.

There was a hierarchy among the constellations due to the history of their lives.

A person couldn't go against their king and the enemy was determined according to historical records.

For example Kurushima Michifusa of Japan could never beat the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.

It was just like how Gwanchang couldn't win against Gyebaek.

Min Jiwon also knew this and didn't look happy.

I spoke first. "Just defeat the army. Or we can't win."

Baekje's army had slightly more military force.

Gyebaek was a military commander. The more people he led, the stronger his power. Gwanchang was no match for him.

Then Yoo Sangah's voice was heard. "Dokja-ssi! I've found it!"

I looked back and found Yoo Sangah running with a small disc. She found it already?

The Ganpyeongui. The relic resembling a wall clock glowed in Yoo Sangah's hands.

At this moment, I had an idea. I looked at Ganpyeongui, then Min Jiwon and the incarnation of Gwanchang. Then I made a decision. Perhaps I could win this without using coins?

“Attack!”

[The character ‘Chu Wangin’ has used the stigma Detached Force Lv. 3!]

The Hwarang kept falling under the hands of the Baekje forces. Min Jiwon looked towards me with a desperate expression and I said, “I think we can win.”

“Huh?”

“We will recreate the battle of Hwangsanbeol.”

Many people knew this but Hwangsanbeol was a battle that Silla won.

---

TL: I gave you a wiki link in the last chapter but I will give a short summary, since this information is important to understand what is going on.

Battle of Hwangsanbeol was a major battle that took place between Baekje and Silla. The commander of Baekje was Gyebaek and the commander of Shilla was Kim Yushin.

The Silla army was 50,000 strong while Baekje could only rally up 5,000 people but Gyebaek rallied his forces with a heroic speech. The Baekje forces won several skirmishes and the Silla forces lost morale.

Then a general sent out his son, Kim Gwanchang to single-handedly fight the enemy. Gwanchang was captured before being released by Gyebaek. After returning to the Silla camp, Gwanchang once again charged to the enemy. Gyebaek captured him again and executed him this time.

Thanks to Gwanchang’s martyrdom, the Silla forces regained morale and Kim Yushin was victorious. Gyebaek died in battle.

---

Image of the Ganpyeongui:



# Chapter 63

## War of Kings (5)

Min Jiwon was surprised by my words.

“...Battle of Hwangsanbeol?”

“Yes, Silla originally won the Battle of Hwangsanbeol. This is according to history.”

Chu Wangin’s sword ran through a Hwarang member.

Obviously, Shilla would win if it was like history. If it was like history. But before I could speak, the captain of Hwarang came forward and shouted, “Don’t retreat! There is no stepping back in a battle!”

At the same time, the Hwarang pulled out their weapons.

“No!”

“Victory! Loyally serve the king!”

“Serve!”

This bastard?

[All of the Hwarang of Silla are subjected to the effect of Mundane World Five Commandments Lv. 2!]

“Hahaha, you are pushing them!”

Gyebaek’s incarnation, Chu Wangin cried out. Hwarang’s captain came running towards him with a spear. He was following his damn sponsor.

[The character ‘Chu Wangin’ has used the stigma Baekje Kendo Lv. 3!]

“Keeoook!”

The body of the Hwarang captain flew through the air after being hit by a big sword.

I shouted towards Min Jiwon. "Tell them to set up the formations!"

"Take your formations! Hurry!"

[Character 'Min Jiwon' has activated Military Command Lv. 2.]

[The army has lost their sense of reason.]

[The skill activation is cancelled.]

"Set up the formation!"

Min Jiwon screamed again but the Hwarang were already inspired by Mundane World Five Commandments and didn't listen to her order. In the first place, they were loyal to the beauty of Queen Jinseong, not her charisma.

I heard a sound. Then Lee Gilyoung landed next to me from where he broke through the window of the museum's second floor.

"Hyung, should I call Titano?"

Lee Gilyoung's eyes shone as he prepared to use Diverse Communication.

"No, it is okay."

It would be helpful if Lee Gilyoung could call the 6th grade insect king like last time but then he would be unconscious for two days. High grade monsters were difficult to control and could also sweep away allies.

In any case, Lee Gilyoung was my hidden card. I had to save him until the beginning of the war with the kings.

"Kuaaak!"

The Hwarang in front of us were knocked out. On the other hand, there wasn't a single dead Baekje person.

I reached out to Yoo Sangah who ran to me.

"Yoo Sangah-ssi, the relic...!"

Yoo Sangah handed me the Ganpyeongui.

The Ganpyeongui. Everyone was distracted by the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword but in fact, the Ganpyeongui was an essential item for the fourth scenario.

The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword had no meaning if this item didn't exist.

“Kuheeok!”

The captain of Hwarang was a wreck as he was hit by Chu Wangin again. It wouldn't be strange if he died in one more blow.

[The constellation Hwarang Knows No Retreat is in a hurry.]

[The constellation 'Last Hero of Hwangsanbeol' is happy.]

[The constellation 'Lady of the Brocade Sleep' is irritated.]

The momentum of the Baekje army grew while Silla's morale broke down. It felt like the spirit of Gyebaek was flowing from Chu Wangin's body.

“Destroy the damn Silla!”

The more that the constellations were in a situation similar to the history that they lived, the greater the coordination with their incarnation and the stronger the power of the stigma.

In addition, the encounter with 'related' constellations...

It was time for the 'stage' to be created.

“Uhh?”

What?”

People screamed with surprise. Sparks filled the surrounding space and the scene changed. Seoul's Gwanghwamun was transformed into a rugged mountain wilderness.

{Stage Transformation.}

It was a phenomenon that occurred when the coordination was high between incarnations with historical correlations.

Space Transformation summoned the space-time that the constellations had fought in. Of course, the space wasn't really changed. It was close to an augmented reality.

The problem was that this wasn't the case for the people who summoned the stage.

"Hahahaha... I missed you Hwangsanbeol!"

Chu Wangin achieved a considerable level of coordination with his sponsor and shouted. Now he seemed to completely believe he was Gyebaek.

Gyebaek was in a hurry. If a constellation did something like this in the early scenarios, it was likely they would receive a sanction from the Bureau. However, Gyebaek was less likely to be affected than the low level constellations.

"U-Uwaaah!"

The frightened Hwarang started to step back.

Lee Sungkook muttered, "He isn't one of the Seven Kings but he has such power... does this make sense?"

"It is possible because Gyebaek is the protagonist of this stage."

Chu Wangin was like a mad monster as he ran around. Once Stage Transformation occurred and coordination with the sponsor increased, the incarnation's strength would multiply.

I looked at the trembling Min Jiwon and opened my mouth.

"I have two ways. One is to let the incarnation of Gwanchang die."

"That... what do you mean?"

Originally, the Battle of Hwangsanbeol was a battlefield that Shilla won thanks to Gwanchang's sacrifice. One half of the battle was complete if he died.

"As soon as Stage Transformation began, this has become the battlefield of history. If the incarnation of Gwanchang dies, the morale of the Silla troops will rise due to their anger. This is recorded in history."

I didn't listen to Min Jiwon's answer.

"The second way is to change history."

I looked down at the Ganpyeongui in my hands. Ganpyeongui, an astronomical observation device produced by Joseon in the 17th century.

Min Jiwon felt uneasy and asked, "What will happen if it fails?"

"Your country will perish."

"Then of course it will be the first option...!"

This was truly Queen Jinseong. She was considered an incompetent ruler for a reason.

"I didn't mean to give you a choice. I will do the second method."

"Then why did you mention it?"

"I gave you a chance. You are not what Silla needs right now."

I manipulated the two discs that made up the Ganpyeongui.

The two discs were called the sky disc and the earth disc respectively. The top was the earth disc and the bottom was the sky disc.

There was a simple definition for Ganpyeongui in Ways of Survival.

{The Ganpyeongui is an item that can find the constellations in heaven.}

As I slowly turned the earth disc, the constellations engraved on the sky disc started to burn brightly.

[Ganpyeongui's special option 'Echo of the Stars' has been activated.]

['Echo of the Stars' allows you to ask for the help of a constellation.]

[The constellation can refuse your request and the number of times Ganpyeongui can be used is reduced when the constellation responds to the request.]

There were seven constellations left on the sky disc. In other words, I can use it seven more times in the future.



It would've been good if there were more constellations left on the relic. Well, it couldn't be helped.

Lee Sungkook seemed to have noticed something and asked, "Are you going to get help from a constellation with that?"

"Not all the constellations are available but there are some great people."

Lee Sungkook was filled with admiration at my answer. He belatedly found out the true value of this item.

"That's it!" Lee Sungkook cried out excitedly, "How about calling Xiang Yu or Lu Bu? If you call them, you can easily deal with Gyebaek."

"I have to know the modifier of the constellation."

In the world of Ways of Survival, the modifier was like the constellations' space-time coordinates. The modifiers were like the the X and Y axis coordinate system in the Star Stream.

"Ah... then..."

Lee Sungkook made a sad expression. He thought that I didn't know the modifiers of Lu Bu and Xiang Yu. But that was an illusion. There was no one in the world who knew as many constellation modifiers as me.

"I'll call a constellation."

[The great constellations hear your voice flowing through the stars.]

Of course, the constellation I was calling wasn't Lu Bu or Xiang Yu. There was no guarantee they would respond to this request and there was someone more fitting for this battlefield.

I stared at the stars in the sky. I faced the numerous stars and opened my mouth.

"I want to call Hwarang Leader King Heungmu the Great."

[The star navigation has begun.]

A part of the sky darkened and a shadow fell to the ground. The battle between Silla and Baekje stopped.

“What nonsense are you saying?”

Chu Wangin sensed something suspicious and started running towards me.

“Representative-nim, we will stop them.”

Lee Sungkook pulled out a sword. I didn’t know how long the hypnotist would be able to endure but I should have some time.

After a while, one of the stars in the sky shone brightly. He finally appeared.

[The constellation ‘King Heungmu the Great’ is looking at you.]

“General.”

[The constellation ‘King Heungmu the Great’ is listening to you.]

“There are people here who need your help. I am calling you because your people are dying.”

[The constellation ‘King Heungmu the Great’ is silent at your words.]

King Heungmu the Great. He wasn’t royalty but he was the only person who was given a posthumous name of a king of Silla.

He probably wouldn’t reject my request. It was because Hwangsanbeol was his battlefield.

But something unexpected happened.

[The constellation ‘King Heungmu the Great’ doesn’t want to be involved in the history of modern life.]

[The constellation ‘King Heungmu the Great’ will reject your offer.]

...What? The constellation was about to fade away when Yoo Sangah interrupted.

“General, please listen to my words!”

The smart Yoo Sangah noticed who King Heungmu the Great was.

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' is looking back.]

"I'm well aware of General's story! The Battle of Hwangsanbeol, the Siege of Pyongyang...! I've read all about it in the records!"

Yoo Sangah took a deep breath before starting to talk.

"I understand that you want to respect the past and history. But General! Some histories don't end after they are recorded."

Yoo Sangah's voice was clear and straightforward.

"Don't you regret it? The battlefield where the young Hwarang are sacrificed and countless people are buried...! Have you already forgotten?"

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' is listening to incarnation Yoo Sangah's story.]

"History won't change. The soldiers on the field won't be comforted and the lives of the young Hwarang won't return. But General! The history here hasn't ended yet! If you come here, at least you can change the history in this place!"

I had forgotten how good a talker Yoo Sangah was. During her early days, she was the queen of PT at Mino Soft.

"General! Your Battle of Hwangsanbeol is over... but we are still at Hwangsanbeol."

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' has silently closed his eyes.]

There were such moments in life. I knew what would happen from now on, even if no one said anything.

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' has responded to your request.]

One of the constellations on Ganpyeongui disappeared and a light from the star in the sky shone on me.

I smiled at the nervous Yoo Sangah. "Well done Yoo Sangah-ssi."

[You have temporarily received the protection of constellation ‘King Heungmu the Great.’]

The muscles in my body twitched like they were surprised. My heart pumped and light and darkness crossed several times in my head. Something was being constructed inside me.

[This is just an old man’s reminiscence of the past.]

This was the mantra of the constellation. Just listening made my existence at stake.

[Please, lend me your voice for a while.]

I nodded while opening my eyes. Everyone on the field of Hwangsanbeol was looking at me.

The incarnation of Gyebaek, Chu Wangin was astonished. “That person...?”

The spirit of a constellation was felt despite him not descending directly. This was the size of the existences called constellations.

“It has been a while, Gyebaek.”

There was a strange depth in my voice. In the distance, the incarnation of Gwanchang staggered.

“Hwarang Gwanchang, there is no need to pay respect to me.”

“G-General...!”

King Heungmu the Great was watching the world through me. He looked at Gwanchang, Gyebaek and the broken Seoul. I was also watching the world through King Heungmu the Great. The sunlight covered the plains of Hwangsan.

“It is funny. Why is it that all of you have gathered here again?”

Chu Wangin laughed madly at these words. It was a laugh filled with deep-seated resentment. At this moment, he really was Gyebaek.

“Don’t you know? It was to meet you again on this field!”

[The character 'Chu Wangin' has used the stigma Baekje Kendo Lv. 4!]

Chu Wangin's sword filled with power and moved. Originally, it was an attack that I wouldn't have been able to avoid or block. But I avoided the attack without much difficulty.

"Gyebaek, why are you doing this to your incarnation? Have you forgotten the constraints of plausibility? You will destroy your incarnation."

It was as he said. Gyebaek was acting unreasonably. I also wondered this as a reader of Ways of Survival.

"Kim Yushin... You must've heard nothing about this world."

"What do you mean?"

"It doesn't matter. My wish was achieved the moment I met you. I'll have no regrets even if I die now!" The incarnation of Gyebaek cried out. "I carry on Baekje's legacy of Buyeo, Gyebaek of Hwangsanbeol! I will settle my lifelong regret here!"

King Heungmu the Great watched Gyebaek's incarnation with sad eyes and opened his mouth through me.

"I am the 15th captain of Hwarang, Kim Yushin."

King Heungmu the Great, Hwarang Leader Kim Yushin.

"I will comfort the soul of the unfortunate constellation and correct the history of modern humans."

The man who led the Battle of Hwangsanbeol to victory sent me his will. I moved my right hand. A bluish glow grew from the hilt.

{The sword of the Hwarang leader is now on the battlefield.}

[The power of the star relic 'Blue Dragon Sword' is temporarily stored in Unbroken Faith.]

The blade of the Blue Dragon Sword soared high into the sky of Hwangsan.

All of Hwangsan seemed to scream. Enormous magic power escaped and a large crack appeared in the earth, centred around me.

{Dragon Flower Tree unit, come to this place right now.}

[The stigma 'Gather the Hwarang' is activated!]

Something was happening in the crack.

The forgotten ghosts buried in the eternal history. There were no names left but they were Hwarang who once lived on this land and who fought only for honour.

*Kuoooooh!*

The Dragon Flower Tree, Kim Yushin's elite unit showed up from the pages of history.

# Chapter 64

## Master of the Throne (1)

Kim Yushin's stigma 'Gather the Hwarang' was a skill that called the elite Hwarang that died in history, the Dragon Flower Tree.

To put it simple, it was a ground version of the 'Ghost Fleet' that Lee Jihye used.

It wasn't comparable to the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare's power but it was still a great stigma used by a constellation.

"Go!"

The buried bones were removed and the Dragon Flower Tree unit rose to fight with Baekje's army. Some Hwarang had no eyes while others had no arms or legs.

It was cruel. They would raise their blades as long as Kim Yushin was here. This was despite their souls being worn down, their anger erased and even their hearts gone.

They were soldiers who fought to prevent the fall of their kingdom. Now they were fighting for a fallen kingdom.

"You are still a coward Kim Yushin! Now you are even pushing your dead men!"

"..."

"Come on! Let's have a one-on-one fight!"

I was still at Gyebaek's provocation. It was because Kim Yushin didn't want to move. He would crush Gyebaek with the overwhelming force of the Dragon Flower Tree. The magic power that emerged from his sword mercilessly filled the air.

"Kim Yushin—!"

The shout filled the air and even the emotionlessly Dragon Flower Tree hesitated for a moment.

This was Gyebaek. The last master of Baekje, Gyebaek.

Gyebaek was a constellation that overwhelmed Kim Yushin just in terms of physical buff abilities. In fact, Gyebaek never fought one-on-one against Kim Yushin in the Battle of Hwangsanbeol.

To be exact, it right to say that Kim Yushin avoided the confrontation.

[The character 'Chu Wangin' has used the stigma Prepared to Fight to the Death for the Country Lv. 2!]

In history, Gyebaek's army fought against Kim Yushin's army that outnumbered them by several times and won a few impossible battles.

The last winner might be Kim Yushin but Gyebaek wasn't defeated until the final battle of Hwangsanbeol was held.

He united his soldiers with patriotism and his shouts were close to insane.

I carried Kim Yushin behind me right now but if things were different, I might've called Gyebaek.

Gwanchang's incarnation shouted, "General!"

"Don't move."

Kim Yushin spoke through my mouth. My expression was unchanged despite looking at the dying Dragon Flower Tree members.

Kim Yushin's serene image was conveyed.

Gyebaek shouted, "Your cowardice hasn't changed despite you becoming a constellation!"

That's right. Kim Yushin was a coward. He was afraid of death and afraid of defeat. That's why he was strong. His emotions were unshakable and he didn't commit rash acts.

Defeat the enemies in a way that achieved victory. That's how he won the final battle of Hwangsanbeol, despite being defeated four previous times.



“Kuaaaaak!”

The hundreds of Dragon Flower Tree members clashed fiercely with Gyebaek. His incarnation was so severely hurt that he could no longer survive. His whole body was bloody while there were fatal wounds on his arms, thighs and sides.

However, Gyebaek kept moving through the crowd of Dragon Flower Tree members towards me.

“Kim... Yu... shin...!”

[The stigma ‘Request for Reinforcements’ has been activated!]

Ghost soldiers appeared like shadows from behind Kim Yushin and sprang towards Gyebaek. Based on the different articles of clothing on the soldiers, they might not be Silla troops.

Perhaps they were the Tang Dynasty troops called to destroy Goguryeo.

As expected from Kim Yushin. The only thing important to him was winning. Using foreign forces wasn’t an important issue for him.

Numerous spears pierced his chest. Gyebaek’s incarnation couldn’t overcome the pain and fell to his knees.

“Kuheok...!”

The incarnation of the strong Gyebaek was now at his limit.

Gyebaek laughed.

“...I am resentful. I can’t touch you even on this fake stage. I wanted to exchange swords with you just once.”

Gyebaek’s red eyes made me feel confused. Gwanchang was alive, history had changed. But this was one part that didn’t change.

Kim Yushin asked, “Gyebaek. Why did you do this?”

“...”

“If you die in this state, you can’t choose another incarnation for a while. Why did you suddenly abandon the scenario?”

Gyebaek had a distant look on his face and then he gave a meaningful smile. Kim Yushin waited before pulling out a blade.

I hurriedly took back control of my voice.

“He can’t be killed with my hands.”

[Why?]

“...There are restrictions.”

The King of No Killing meant I couldn’t carry out direct slaughter. As soon as I killed one person, I would lose my throne.

Kim Yushin nodded like he understood.

[...I see. I roughly understand. Don’t worry. The stars will honour your commitment. But it is I, Kim Yushin, who will deal with Gyebaek, not you.]

“But...”

[...There is a lingering attachment, please understand.]

Kim Yushin gestured and one of the Dragon Flower Tree members nodded. I handed over my voice to Kim Yushin.

“Gyebaek, let’s meet in the next world.”

Gyebaek’s incarnation looked up at us silently. He wanted to say something but he couldn’t open his mouth. At the last moment, his face looked like a minor actor who completed his scenes rather than Gyebaek.

Then the incarnation’s head quietly flew through the air.

[Stage Transformation has ended.]

[You have experienced the Battle of Hwangsanbeol.]

[1,000 coins have been earned as experience compensation.]

I looked around and saw that all of Baekje's army was wiped out.

[The authority of King of No Killing is retained due to the indirect nature of the killing.]

It was fortunate. King of No Killing was only lost when I killed someone directly with my own hands. The life that the Dragon Flower Tree member took wasn't recognized as me killing someone.

"Representative-nim! Are you okay?" Lee Sungkook's voice was heard from behind me.

Yoo Sangah sighed with relief while Lee Gilyoung was disgruntled that he couldn't do much. Then Min Jiwon asked, "What the hell was that...?"

She looked like she had completely lost her soul.

I shrugged and said, "You should study history if you want to be a king."

I might've called Kim Yushin but I didn't belong to Silla or Baekje. I called Kim Yushin because he was the most appropriate one to deal with Gyebaek.

Anyway, I was glad that the result was better than expected. I was able to thoroughly check the performance of the Ganpyeongui and I could get some coins and items from the Baekje members.

[You have earned 5,400 coins.]

[Coins Possessed: 74,950 C]

Now I wasn't afraid of the final phase of the fourth scenario.

"It is time to go to the north."

[The remaining duration of the call is three minutes.]

Kim Yushin's divine blessing still remained. I should take advantage of the remaining time left on the Ganpyeongui. It could only be used seven times so I couldn't waste it.

"Rise up Dragon Flower Tree!"

The broken fragments of the Dragon Flower Tree unit rose again and I pointed north with my sword.

“Advance!”

The consumption of magic power was huge so the operation time of the Dragon Flower Tree unit was short. The Dragon Flower Tree unit started to march north, randomly sweeping away the small and medium groups.

It might be possible to wipe out all the forces of the other kings gathered at the National Palace Museum.

There were screams as forces fought all over the street.

“What are these skeletons? Aacck!”

The incarnations that ran towards me were crushed by the Dragon Flower Tree unit.

Since I wasn’t the one attacking, I didn’t get a penalty for killing. Yes, this was an invigorating taste.

Kim Yushin’s holy voice was heard in my head.

[There is something strange about you. Your mind is intact despite hearing my true voice...]

“I have a strong mentality.”

I was a bit surprised by the words. The constellations used the ‘indirect messages’ to communicate for a reason.

Kim Yushin was just a low-ranking constellation but most people would pee their pants or faint hearing his holy voice.

In fact, I was a bit worried about that too...

[Remember, you owe me a big debt. In order to help you, I had to embrace more possibilities than necessary.]

There was something sinister about his tone. I quickly expressed my appreciation.

“I am thankful. I won’t forget General’s help.”

[You are a hasty friend. You don't have anyone to pass it onto yet...]

"...Won't it happen one day? If I give birth to a child, I will surely tell them what happened today."

[Rather, you don't seem to have a sponsor.]

I had an ominous feeling. Damn, this old fox kept talking.

[I like you. If you don't mind, I would like to become your sponsor in this world.]

His words were nice but it merely meant to be his slave.

"That will be a problem."

[Why? Isn't my strength enough? You can become the strongest of this age with just my stigma.]

The Gather the Hwarang stigma was good. But that was when applied to Kim Yushin's saga.

The strongest in this era? He was trying to scam me.

The words were ridiculous for someone who wasn't a fable level. If the Great Sage the Equal of Heaven heard it, he would've squeezed Kim Yushin's head tightly.

"Now isn't the age of the Three Kingdoms. You are old and should take a break."

We had fun together but let's not see each other again.

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is laughing at 'King Heungmu the Great'.]

[300 coins have been sponsored.]

Kim Yunshin was silent for a moment, perhaps because his pride was pricked. I thought he would back off but a sharp pain suddenly shot through my head.

[Have you forgotten that my divine blessing still remains?]

Currently, Kim Yushin and I were connected through the Ganpyeongui. The muscles of

my body spasmed in an unusual manner. No matter what, wasn't he a great person of Korea...? No, maybe he could do this because he was a great person of Korea.

Dammit.

[It would be better to think again.]

Yoo Sangah looked at me with worry.

"Dokja-ssi?"

"Yoo Sangah-ssi. Get away from me. Quickly!"

My trembling right hand didn't listen as it raised Unbroken Faith and started pointing it at Yoo Sangah.

Kim Yushin started to exert control over my body.

[Did you say there was a restriction on your actions? I wonder what the restriction is. What if I kill that woman right now?]

"Kim Yushin, this is your will. It isn't my karma."

[Huhu, I don't know. What if I disengage the moment I stab the blade? Won't it be recognized as your actions? And this woman seems to be quite precious to you?]

"...Stop."

[Make a promise. In the next Sponsor Selection, you will choose Kim Yushin.]

The intent of this old fox was obvious. The second Sponsor Selection would begin the moment the fourth scenario was over. Kim Yushin wanted to use this pledge as an opportunity to acquire me.

If I hadn't read Ways of Survival, it might not be a bad choice. Kim Yushin was a fairly decent constellation and there were a few scenario in the middle that could be cleared with Gather the Hwarang alone.

However, if I was going to pick a sponsor, I would've picked the Great Sage the Equal of Heaven in the beginning. Why should I choose Kim Yushin now?

“I said no.”

In addition, I had the contract with Bihyung that didn’t allow me to choose a sponsor.

Kim Yushin’s voice hardened.

[You are a stubborn young man. But it is the wrong choice. How long can you endure?]

The blade in my hand started moving towards Yoo Sangah.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi, quickly—!”

Why didn’t the smart Yoo Sangah move? I looked at my right hand moving against my will and finally made a decision. Dammit, I respected him as a great person but he forced me to do this...

I took a deep breath. This was my body. I would never give it to this guy or any constellation.

[The exclusive skill, ‘Fourth Wall’ is activated!]

# Chapter 65

## Master of the Throne (2)

The pages of Ways of Survival flashed in my head. A light streamed through my head and the strings of light started to line up. They were the text of Ways of Survival.

[Heok...?]

Kim Yushin discovered something was wrong and his presence became noticeably thinner. The old fox noticed quickly.

[The echo of the constellation connected through Echo of the Stars has disappeared.]

At the last moment, Kim Yushin's astounded voice was heard.

[What are you...?]

Then Kim Yushin was gone.

I was surprised as well. I expected it to be possible with Fourth Wall, but I didn't think the Ganpyeongui connection to the constellation could be broken so easily.

The encounter in the Theater Dungeon was a hint. The Fourth Wall had destroyed the theatre master the moment he tried to look inside my head.

I was hoping the same thing would happen to the constellation but Kim Yushin noticed quickly and ran away.

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' has doubts about your existence.]

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' will be watching you closely in the future.]

In any case, I was still being followed by the old geezer.

"...Are you okay?"



“Yes. I’m fine. But...”

What was this? I looked up and found that my limbs were tied up with magic power. It was a chrysalis-like appearance. Yoo Sangah’s face was completely red.

“That... I couldn’t run away but I couldn’t let you attack me.”

I roughly understood what was going on. She used Binding Thread on me during that short interval. I thought she was frozen with surprise but she was actually using a skill.

“Your improvisation is amazing.”

“...I’m sorry.”

“It is a compliment. If I start acting strange in the future, act like you did now.”

“I-I will release you!”

Yoo Sangah looked embarrassed but I was serious. It was my mistake when I thought of her as an ordinary office worker.

I looked back and saw Min Jiwon looking between me and Yoo Sangah with curious eyes. “Well... it turned out like this. I came to help only to end up being helped.”

I nodded. “We will be enemies the next time we meet.”

“...Why don’t you join us now? It is a common proceeding in dramas.”

“This isn’t a drama.”

“My friend! Make friends with faith. It is the banner of our Hwarang.” Min Jiwon said with a smile before moving away.

Could she be a good king? I don’t know. Perhaps even the King of Beauty didn’t know.

“We will go as well. Lee Sungkook-ssi! Come on.”

Lee Sungkook emerged from behind the building with Lee Gilyoung. This bastard, when did he hide in such a place?

I took my companions and started to move north.

The place that Kim Yushin's Gather the Hwarang swept through was devastated.

The armed forces of the small kings were lying all over the place. This was the dignity of a proper constellation. Kim Yushin was a cowardly but useful constellation.

I picked up three flags and built up my achievements.

[Your brown flag has absorbed the cumulative achievements of the brown flag.]

[Your brown flag has evolved into a purple flag.]

[You are able to use the perks of the purple flag.]

Indeed, the best thing was to grow without a fight. I looked around and saw that most flags had already been collected.

From the purple flag onwards, the achievement values of the flag wouldn't rise well. In other words, it was useless to grab a small king from now on.

"Jung Minseob-ssi, are you there?"

The next moment, Jung Minseob appeared out of thin air. The Recluse's Cloak that I handed him in advance was covering his body. Jung Minseob's mission was to scout the National Palace Museum.

"How many have gone inside so far?"

"A total of nine kings have entered, including the Tyrant King and True Reader."

Nine. It was a reasonable number.

"What are the flag types?"

"There are seven purple and two brown flags. In particular, there are two with really a really deep purple colour."

"I guess they are the Tyrant and True Reader."

"That's right."

Jung Minseob, wasn't his talent quite useful?

I opened my mouth. "This time, I will only go with Yoo Sangah-ssi and Gilyoung. Both of you wait outside. Stay hidden using the cloak."

"...Will it be okay?"

"Yes, I only need three people right now."

"I will enter if you call us."

I appreciated the thought but it would just be a disruption. It was because the current Seoul Palace Museum was a dungeon.

[A new hidden scenario has arrived!]

+

[Hidden Scenario – Artifact Trials]

**Category:** Hidden

**Difficulty:** F ~ A+

**Clear Conditions:** Clear the right 'artifact dungeon' with the proper personnel.

**Time Limit:** None

**Compensation:** 500 ~ 5,000 coins

**Failure:** Death

+

A white marble lobby appeared before us as we entered the museum. There were no signs of anyone else in the lobby.

Yoo Sangah spoke in a soft voice.

"I can't like culture now without feeling scared. There was the previous theatre and now this museum..."

"Hyung, are we going to get the legendary sword?"

"No, not right now."

Of course, I could find the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword in this dungeon. That's why I sowed the information.

[Please select the type of dungeon you want to enter.]

\* Single player dungeon – Nagak (Large seashell played as a horn in Korean traditional music)

\* Three person dungeon – Acupuncture Copper Man

\* Five person dungeon – Dongui Bogam (Korean book compiled by a royal physician, considered as one of the classics of Oriental medicine)

\* Seven person dungeon – Dragon Jar

However, the dungeon with the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword couldn't be entered in a normal manner. It was because the dungeon was only accessible using the Sang Pyong Tong Bo coin which was given as a reward when clearing a dungeon.

I will choose the three person dungeon, the Acupuncture Copper Man."

[You have entered the three person dungeon.]

Lee Gilyoung looked a bit disappointed. He had been expecting to get a great artifact.

"Gilyoung. An artifact isn't about the outward appearance."

"...Huh?"

"There are many impressive looking things that have no substance."

The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was one such item. Rather, the good things in this dungeon could be obtained from the commonplace dungeons.

An example was the skill that could be obtained the Acupuncture Copper Man dungeon.

Yoo Sangah was amazed and surprised as soon as we entered the dungeon.

"...There are other people besides us."

Intermittent screams could be heard from the dungeon.

"Uwaaaaack! Go away!"

It was a monster in human form with a matte colour. The three person dungeon was filled with these copper people.

It was the 7th grade species, the Acupuncture Copper Man.

After a certain amount of time, these guys would self-proliferate unless the method to attack them was known. The Acupuncture Copper Man didn't suffer because they had a strong body, no internal organs and no neural networks.

"Aaaah! Save me!"

Some of the incarnations' swords cut at copper men but they didn't receive much damage. Rather, they pulled the incarnations' bodies down.

The body of a man in his 50s was torn to pieces in the hands of the copper men.

"...Dokja-ssi, how do we deal with these guys? They don't receive damage at all."

Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung aimed their weapons or skills at the incoming copper men but there was hardly any effect.

Sometimes Lee Gilyoung's blunt attack would damage them but he didn't have any idea of what he did.

"Look at their bodies."

The monsters that appeared in the 'artifacts trials' were based on relics kept in Seoul Palace Museum.

For example, the monsters in the one player dungeon was literally a musical instrument made of a seashell and as for the Dongui Bogam five person dungeon... there was no need to explain anything. It was the same for the Acupuncture Copper Man in the three person dungeon.

Yoo Sangah stared closely at a copper man and opened her mouth.

"Is there something etched on the body?"

"That's right."

In fact, the Acupuncture Copper Man was a relic that displayed 354 acupuncture points on the human body, including the front, back, arms, legs and head.

It was an artifact used to study acupuncture in the Joseon Dynasty.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

I stabbed one of the acupuncture points on the copper man. Then I twisted it and the body scattered into powder. It was a meaningless end for a 7th grade reproduction species.

[You have hunted the first Acupuncture Copper Man!]

“If you look closely, the colour for each acupuncture point was subtly different. Some are devoid of blood and some are deadly. Some of the points... there is a different effect every time an acupuncture point is hit.”

“Ah...!”

The important thing was to find the acupuncture point that didn't break the flow.

I demonstrated a few times and Lee Gilyoung and Yoo Sangah got the knack for it very quickly.

Lee Gilyoung used Diverse Communication to shock the points with small insects, while Yoo Sangah applied Binding Thread. I honestly admired what I saw.

These two people, they really had excellent growth.

[Your party is the first to hunt 100 Acupuncture Copper Men!]

[You have cleared the three person dungeon.]

[Four Sang Pyong Tong Bo coins are obtained as a basic reward.]

[The exclusive skill 'Hit a Pressure Point' has been acquired.]

I got the skill I aimed for.

Hit a Pressure Point. It was a unique technique to use the pressure points to subdue the enemy. It was an essential skill for me to maintain the 'King of No Killing.'

Yoo Sangah looked at the Sang Pyong Tong Bo coins curiously and muttered, “Can we

buy something with this?”

“It can be exchanged for coins or a dungeon ticket.”

“Then...”

“Of course, we will use it for the dungeon admission ticket. Pay me three each. I have four so combined, it will be 10 coins.”

“10? Wait a minute, Dokja-ssi...?”

“We will enter the hidden dungeon where we can get the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.”

Yoo Sangah asked with surprise.

“But didn’t you say we wouldn’t get the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword?”

“We aren’t going after the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.”

We were going to ‘hunt’ the kings.

# Chapter 66

## Master of the Throne (3)

We were going to enter the dungeon but not to get the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung immediately understood what I meant.

“You are going to take their flags.”

“Then you will kill them.”

They had different interpretations.

Yoo Sangah looked down at Lee Gilyoung with surprised eyes. The interesting thing was that Lee Gilyoung looked up at Yoo Sangah with disappointment.

“Hyung, leave the finishing touches to me.”

This boy... he already noticed that I couldn't directly kill a person.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

[Currently collecting information about the corresponding figure.]

Lee Gilyoung's information still wasn't available.

I turned my head and encountered Yoo Sangah's worried eyes. She looked between Lee Gilyoung and I before bowing her head. I spoke to Lee Gilyoung, “Do as you please.”

I could see what Yoo Sangah was worried about. Lee Gilyoung wasn't even in middle school yet. But she should be aware of it. The morals that we used to have were now useless in this world.

“This isn't a game. Be careful.”



“Yes, don’t worry.”

I listened to Lee Gilyoung’s voice and hid the flag on my back.

Until now, the flag was a good bait to attract the small kings. However, from now on, it would just be bait for predators. There was nothing good about advertising that I was a king on this battlefield.

The intermediate dokkaebi’s voice was heard.

[Huhu, everyone is doing well! So many people are doing hidden scenario then what is the meaning of ‘hidden’?]

It had no nerves. I would find it embarrassing now and again.

[Someone has already fulfilled the requirements for the first qualification. Once again, this is interesting.]

A king had already achieved the black flag. It was probably one of the Seven Kings.

[After a while, the requirements of the second qualifications will be revealed.]

I turned to look at the party members and said, “Quickly. The dokkaebi’s ‘after a while’ might not be long.”

I put together the Sang Pyong Tong Bo coins in the lobby one by one.

[You have entered a hidden field using 10 Sang Pyong Tong Bo coins.]

[Do you want to enter the hidden chapter, the Big Dipper?]

Right now, I had the purple flag. The kings with the same purple flags would flock to the Big Dipper. In other words, my prey were all gathered in one place.

[You have entered the Big Dipper chapter.]

My vision waved and the lobby soon changed. The white marble lobby was transformed into a spacious waiting room.

There were seven doors at the end of the waiting room.

“Uh...!”

Yoo Sangah let out a brief groan and took a step back. There were bodies at Yoo Sangah’s feet. They were the bodies of group members who had fought each other. Lee Gilyoung looked down at the corpses with an expressionless face.

There were so many bodies that it was hard to walk straight. Hundreds of bodies were scattered all over the place like graves. There was a wave of blood already.

I felt a bit strange. If I hadn’t spread the plagiarist writer’s textbook, they might not have died. Then didn’t they die because of me?

“Hey, there are people.”

The centre of the waiting room contained a huge body using the bodies of people as fuel.

I could see the faces of some survivors. I didn’t know if they were allies or held a truce, but they weren’t fighting.

I looked at the group of people and spoke to my party members. “Be careful.”

A group stood up. Greed could be seen in their eyes.

“You are a newcomer. Who is your king?”

Some people secretly moved behind out party while others drew our attention. The encirclement was gradually becoming narrower.

“Is it you? Or maybe the woman next to you? It can’t be the kid.”

[Many of the constellations are annoyed by the pests.]

[A few constellations want you to take serious action.]

I was already planning on that.

“Hey, why aren’t you answering... aack!”

The white light of Unbroken Faith filled the air. The unstoppable trajectory cut off the limbs of a person. A confused person shouted, “Damn! Just kill him!”

The people took out their weapons like they had been waiting. But it was too late.

“W-Why are you so fast?”

There were few people were agility higher than me right now.

They didn't have high level skills so no one other than the Seven Kings could follow my movements right now.

The Blade of Faith swung in a semicircle and cut five or six people at the same time.

The attack that followed cut off a hand holding a weapon. I pierced another wrist.

“Kuaaaak!”

The severed limbs flew unrealistically through the air. I walked behind a man screaming painfully and used a skill.

[The exclusive skill 'Hit a Pressure Point Lv. 1' is activated.]

I had cut off the man's limbs but there was no need to be cruel.

There was a dark blue dagger hidden in the man's arms. This was the poisonous dagger that could be obtained at the end of the 5 person dungeon, the 'Dongui Bogam'. If my response had been even a bit late, this would've been us.

As soon as the people collapsed, I called to Lee Gilyoung.

“Please.”

Lee Gilyoung nodded. Lee Gilyoung's hand stopped the people's breathing one by one. He moved his hand like he was killing insignificant insects. I was also a little surprised.

Then Yoo Sangah came forward.

“I'll do it Gilyoung...”

“...Can you do it?”

“I will still do it.”

Yoo Sangah's tone was unusually stubborn. She looked grimly at Lee Gilyoung. She held a knife and turned her back to me. Maybe Yoo Sangah despised me.

Perhaps it was fortunate that I couldn't read Yoo Sangah's mind.

Yoo Sangah moved even more efficiently than Lee Gilyoung and took the lives of the remaining people. Her fingertips trembled as the work finished.

"...Will we continue in this fashion?"

"Yes, probably."

"I will do it in the future instead of Gilyoung."

"Can you do it?"

"...There is no problem. It is just like breaking an egg."

Yoo Sangah used an analogy as she pretended to be calm.

"I can do it better." Lee Gilyoung grumbled, making Yoo Sangah place a hand on his head.

There would be many twists and turns in the future. Sometimes we might feel like collapsing or want to give up. But we had to overcome it.

Most of the Seven Kings we would soon meet would have higher stats than us and they would also possess unique skills. There would certainly be situations where we couldn't win without being hit by the enemies.

We silently picked up the items that the group dropped.

[You have earned 2,300 coins.]

[The item 'Dongui Bogam – Various Diseases (Upper Half of the Body)' has been acquired.]

As expected, they were people who cleared the five person dungeon. A total of eight books were available from the five person dungeon, each with different usages. I was sure there were a few people who cleared the five person dungeon so the others should be moderately easy to find.

Unfortunately, there was no 'king' in the group I just killed.

*Clap clap clap.*

Then the sound of clapping was heard.

One of the men watching from the big bonfire approached me with a smile on his face. He showed no signs of panic despite the other group being wiped out.

I raised my item and warned them casually.

"What do you want?"

The man took one step back and raised both hands as if he had no intention of fighting.

"Uhh, calm down. I don't want to fight."

I took a closer look at the man. There was a large spear on his back. The firm chest muscles were revealed by the clothes and his long hair was tied back.

"You have great skills. You don't seem to have any passive skills but you wiped out the Chungjeong group... those bastards, they are one of the groups that lost their king."

Of course, that's why they came forward so recklessly.

"But you're a little late. The major kings have all entered the dungeon. They will be busy fighting now. Well, the winner is almost decided but... the last king who passed through here was incredibly fierce."

"Who is that?"

"Do you know the Tyrant King?" The man continued to speak. "He is currently the most powerful king in northern Seoul. This is a story between those who already know. The owner of the Absolute Throne will surely be the Tyrant King."

A person might think so if they saw the Tyrant King in person. The Tyrant King's armed force was certainly the top among the Seven Kings.

But it was laughable for him to be the owner of the Absolute Throne. The Tyrant King was strong but he wasn't the strongest among the Seven Kings.

As if reading my mind, the man opened his mouth.

“But I don’t think so. I think that the Tyrant King will never become the owner of the Absolute Throne.”

“...Why do you think that?”

“I saw it myself. He has a strong power but he doesn’t know how to handle people. A king must know the hearts of the people.”

The hearts of the people?

“My king is able to do that. It is why many incarnations follow him. I am sure that my king will become the master of the Absolute Throne.”

I followed the man’s glance. The Big Dipper chapter consisted of seven entrances. Perhaps his king was moving in one of the passages.

“What is your point? Do you want us to join you?”

“Haha, that would be nice but you won’t follow me just like that, right? I just want to make an offer. If you don’t mind, why don’t you ally with us?”

I realized why this man was still in the waiting room. This guy was a bait.

“Why should I?”

“The Tyrant King is very strong. I believe in my king but I don’t think he can defeat the Tyrant King alone.”

In contrast to his loyalty, he was a very realistic guy. But he was a ‘real’ loyalist.

“Think about it. What will happen if we can’t stop him from holding the legendary sword? What if he gets the Absolute Throne and controls all the kings in Seoul? Don’t you think that you should stop this no matter what?”

I dimly remembered.

It didn’t happen in the third regression but the ‘Anti-Tyrant King Alliance’ had formed many times in Ways of Survival.

Once again, the future had changed.

“You have a point.”

“That is why I’m making this suggestion. Our group will soon be acting against the Tyrant King. We have already talked with several other kings. I don’t know what group you belong to but you won’t lose anything by joining us. You just need to give us a spoonful.”

It was exactly as he said. The problem was that the price of the spoonful was bigger than he thought...

The man took my silence as my acceptance.

“If you are serious, you can meet our king and think about it. It is almost time for him to return to the waiting room... Oh, there he is.”

In fact, one of the seven doors opened and the group that entered the Big Dipper returned.

“King...”

The people standing at the door knelt down at once. Then the man in the centre of the crowd approached this side.

He was a clean shaven man. There was a brown club in his hands.

Wait. This guy, was it him?

# Chapter 67

## Master of the Throne (4)

The one-eyed man approached us. This was my first meeting with one of Seoul's Seven Kings.

Yoo Sangah talked in the group chat.

*–Dokja-ssi, this person is perhaps...*

*–Yes, you're right.*

I nodded to Yoo Sangah. It was impossible not to think of this person when seeing the appearance.

*–By the way, I don't understand. Even if the constellation is 'that person', why is the incarnation dressed like that?*

*–His sympathy with the constellation seems to be high. The higher the sympathy rate, the more the incarnation is influenced by the lifestyle of the constellation.*

*–I should never cough in front of him.*

The man with long hair tied back was bowing to the man approaching us.

"Your Majesty. You came."

"Yes."

"What happened?"

"Do I need to say it? Here."

The one-eyed man pointed to his staff. There was a blue jewel available from the Big Dipper embedded on it.



[Greedy Wolf Star].

The long-haired man admired it.

“Ohh...!”

Wasn't he quite good? Already gaining one star jewel...

The star jewels were the rewards of the Big Dipper chapter.

It was an item that increased overall stats by one level. It had a good effect on its own but the star jewels were meaningful when seven were collected.

It was because the jewels were the summoning material for the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

The one-eyed man looked at me. “Who are these people?”

“They have just entered the Big Dipper chapter. Their abilities are quite good so I was thinking about getting them to join.”

“Really?”

The one-eyed man and I extended our hands to each other at the same time.

“I am Cha Sangkyung.”

“I am Kim Dokja.”

I shook his hand while activating a skill.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

### **[Character Information]**

**Name:** Cha Sangkyung

**Age:** 26 years old

**Constellation Support:** One-eyed Maitreya

**Private Attribute:** Pseudo Sect Founder (Hero), Maitreya King (Hero)

**Exclusive Skills:** Weapons Training Lv. 5, Mental Barrier Lv. 3, Eloquent Speech Lv. 3,

Skillful Deception Lv. 3, False Prayer Lv. 1...

**Stigma:** Maitreya Promised Land Lv. 2, Law of Interest Lv. 2, Demonic Enemy Lv. 3

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 28, Strength Lv. 26, Agility Lv. 28, Magic Power Lv. 25.

**Overall Evaluation:** No one can be free in front of his 'eye' that gives insight into everything. Be careful not to cough in front of him.

+

It was regrettable that Jung Heewon wasn't here. If she saw this man in front of me, she would never speak nonsense about my sponsor again.

Cha Sangkyung said, "I have a burden of seeing things. Can I look at you once?"

"Yes."

Yes, he could try.

[The character 'Cha Sangkyung' has used Law of Interest Lv. 2!]

The stigma 'Law of Interest' was quite interesting among the investigation techniques in Ways of Survival. It didn't reveal the attributes window of the opponent but it was a skill that roughly gave information about the personality of the opponent. In other words, he would see a 'Easily fooled Demonic Enemy' if the person was 'good', while he would see a 'Back-stabbing Demonic Enemy' if the person was 'bad.' For example...

[The character 'Cha Sangkyung' has discovered that you are a demonic enemy that shouldn't be touched.]

It was like this.

"T-This?"

"King, why are you acting like this?"

[The character 'Cha Sangkyung' is greatly disturbed.]

Cha Sangkyung shouted with a pale face.

"D-Demonic enemy!"

"Huh? It can't be..."

At his words, the group members of the Maitreya King simultaneously looked at me. The atmosphere became tense when Cha Sangkyung urgently added.

“N-Nothing. I have made a mistake.”

“Huh? There’s nothing?”

“Yes, it is nothing. Everyone back off.”

Indeed. He would be a fool to ignore the warning of the constellation. By the way, a demonic enemy that shouldn’t be touched...

Maybe the One-eyed Maitreya didn’t want to fight with me.

“Sigh... it isn’t surprising.”

The dubious thing was the reaction of the long-haired man. It was momentary but there was an expression of ‘regret’ on his face.

“The plan will start in one hour. I’m looking forward to your participation despite being a bit late.”

Cha Sangkyung said before returning to his group members.

The first encounter with Gung Ye ended like this. (TL: Gung Ye had a slight mention earlier in the novel. He is a king who proclaimed himself a Buddha and became a tyrant who sentenced death to anyone opposing him, including his own wife)

The long-haired man said, “Phew, it almost became a major event. I’m glad.”

“It is absurd to say that he is a king who knows the hearts of the people.”

“Haha, Gung Ye might be recorded as a tyrant later on but he was a good and wise king first. You never know what will happen in the future. History can change.”

I looked carefully at the long-haired man and asked, “By the way, who are you?”

“Oh, I haven’t introduced myself yet. I am Han Sooyoung. I am Cha Sangkyung’s assistant.”

A man who supported the incarnation of Gung Ye. It was highly likely that he was

attached to Gung Ye's side because of his sponsor.

Who was it? Perhaps it was a king? I immediately used a skill.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[The information of this person can't be read in 'Character List.']

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

...What?

"Um? What's wrong?"

I looked at the shamelessly speaking Han Sooyoung and couldn't help laughing. I see... now I knew who this person was.

"It's nothing. Just... I feel like you are a demonic enemy."

"Haha, what do you mean?"

I could see Han Sooyoung's eyes change strangely. Maybe at this moment, both of us were thinking the same thing. The question was who would pull out a sword first.

The doors of the waiting room started to open one by one.

"The kings are coming!"

There was tension in the Maitreya group while several people in the waiting room started cheering.

I watched the kings walking out the door and asked Han Sooyoung.

"Are they on the same side?"

"Yes, they are all kings who promised to cooperate with us. From left to right, there is the 'Prudent King' Yoon Kiyoung and 'Fighting King' Kim Baekho. Then the last one who came out is the 'Earth Dragon King' Gu Daesung."

I remembered something when I heard this nickname.

The Prudent King and Fighting King. They were just like their nicknames. They had

decent skills and stats but they were one step lacking compared to the Seven Kings.

The only one I needed to pay attention to was the Earth Dragon King Gu Daesung.

Gu Daesung discovered Cha Sangkyung and asked, “You have already come out? Fast.”

“You are a rude earthworm.”

“...Earthworm? Is that what you are calling my sponsor?”

Yoo Sangah was startled when she heard their words and whispered to me, “That person, I think he has a good sponsor behind him.”

“...How do you know?”

“I heard the story that the king of Baekje was born from an earth dragon.”

“Earth dragon?”

“That’s what they meant by ‘earthworm.’ The other kings are calling him the son of an earth dragon in a mocking manner.”

She was really amazing. She figured out the identity of Gu Daesung with this much information.

Yoo Sangah was right.

Earth Dragon King Gu Daesung. In my memories, he was one of Seoul’s Seven Kings with the late King Gyeon Hwon as his sponsor.

“There are quite a few people with kings as a sponsor. Then the king we saw before...”

I nodded. In fact, it wasn’t a coincidence that there were so many incarnations with a ‘king’ as their sponsor.

The situation would be similar in other areas, not just the Seoul Dome.

In Japan, there would be a competition between the three heroes including Oda

Nobunaga. In the UK, there would be a competition between Richard the Lionheart or Henry VIII.

The world's greatest constellations would be preparing for a war over the Absolute Throne, raising their coordination with their incarnation to a breathtaking level.

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' is expecting the appearance of a new fable class constellation.]

[The constellation 'Bald General of Justice' is watching the situation with sweaty hands.

The other high-ranking constellations were also interested. It was natural. As I said before, the fourth scenario was an event for the greatest constellations of each country.

"Is everyone gathered?"

The kings soon gathered in the middle and gave a speech.

"Our enemy is the Tyrant King who entered the third door! The Tyrant King has already received two jewels from this dungeon and cowardly raided innocent kings. Some of the people present would've lost a king to him."

That's why this waiting room was a field of corpses.

Perhaps the Tyrant King killed two kings and took away their star jewels. It meant he would soon gather all seven star jewels...

"The new Seoul shouldn't be handed over to such a person. If he gets the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword and then takes the Absolute Throne, there will be endless grief and tragedy in Seoul!"

"Thus, the people have to fight! Get up right now! The kings here are all wise. The future will be fine no matter which of us becomes the absolute king. We have to at least stop the worst king!"

"This will be a struggle for a righteous way of living! Take care! You will be great fighters taking your first step into a new history!"

The speech didn't have much substance but people became excited. Some people

cheered, some sympathized while others were touched to tears. It was like they were real revolutionaries fighting for justice.

I looked at the scene alone.

Just one month ago, the people here had voted for a president. They did their duty and agreed to have private property through legitimate economic activities. All of a sudden, it felt like a dream.

In just one month, Seoul had returned to the kingdom days.

“Depart!”

Hundreds of people entered through the third door. Cha Sangkyung’s group was at the back and we moved in line with them.

Our vision wavered before a giant tunnel appeared. It was a huge tunnel where the size couldn’t be easily measured.

Han Sooyoung walked beside me and opened his mouth. “This is so exciting. I feel like I’m in a martial arts novel.”

“A martial arts novel?”

Han Sooyoung nodded with a meaningful smile. “Why, don’t you think it is like a martial arts novel? It is like a treasure map. The legendary sword is sleeping in the stone chamber and whoever obtains the sword shall be the best person in the world!”

Han Sooyoung spoke accompanied by gestures seemed quite plausible. It wouldn’t be unbelievable if he was an actor.

“It is a common cliché in a martial arts novel, the treasure sword.”

“Oh, Dokja-ssi, do you read martial arts novels as well?”

It couldn’t be missed when talking about genre fiction.

“I read quite a bit. By the way, there is a common development in these cliché novels.”

“Common development? What is it?”

“It turns out that the treasure map is a fake! This type of development.”

Han Sooyoung’s eyes shook. “This is interesting. What happens next?”

“It is an obvious story. The ‘shadow’ laughs quietly and kills the people gathered because of the fake treasure.”

“Hoh... is that the current situation? Could someone be a shadow?”

I nodded and stated, “It is a possibility although I don’t like such obvious cliches.”

“Um? What does that mean?”

“To be honest, there are too many cliches like the treasure sword.

“Hmm... there are too many stories, making it bad?”

“For writers, I think it is a story that lacks distress.”

Han Sooyoung’s expression slightly hardened. “Then what would Dokja-ssi do if you were the writer? What if you had to write about the treasure sword?”

“I’m not sure. I am a ‘reader’ as my name suggests.”

“I think that a reader would do the same. Writing familiar cliches will give satisfaction to the readers.”

Yes, I thought he would say something like this. I smiled and asked, “Who said this? You are speaking as a writer. I’m not saying that cliches are bad. At the very least, a plagiarist shouldn’t use it.”

“Pla... giarist?”

“Yes, a plagiarist.”

It was funny to see Han Sooyoung’s face change colours.

“Well, every story is similar. It is the details that are a bit different... Can it really be called plagiarism? Perhaps if Dokja-ssi is the writer—”



“Nope, I would do it differently.”

Han Sooyoung’s eyebrows twitched. “...You would write it differently? How?”

“For example, like this.”

I raised Unbroken Faith and cut his neck. No blood was visible as his head fell down.

I added, “Why are you hiding when it will be revealed anyway?”

Then Han Sooyoung’s head spoke from where it was lying on the ground. “How interesting. Kim Dokja.”

# Chapter 68

## Master of the Throne (5)

I picked up his severed head and asked, "As expected, this is also an avatar. Han Sooyoung is your real name?"

"Yes."

Han Sooyoung was the First Apostle as I thought. That damn plagiarist was always hiding like a coward.

"W-W-What is this guy?" People shouted with alarm from all sides. There were confused voices and voices filled with betrayal. I stepped to one side with Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung. Of course, Han Sooyoung's talking head was still held in one hand.

"I was right. It is you who spread out the 'text novel.' Right?"

"That's right, I scattered the text version of your plagiarized novel."

"...The revelation isn't plagiarized."

"It is plagiarism. Did you write the original setting?"

"Don't compare my work to that rubbish."

"You understand what I am saying and don't deny reading the original."

Han Sooyoung glared at me.

"Everyone, kill him! What are you doing?"

"A-A head is talking!"

Han Sooyoung's expression distorted. People were alarmed by the turmoil but showed no signs of acting. In addition, they would soon have no room to worry about us. I smiled at Han Sooyoung.

“The cliché that you said will start soon.”

I waited and there was a burst of light. The rings of light moved, drawing lines of blood on the bodies of some people.

“What...?”

A person screamed as blood spurted from a body cut to pieces. The people in the back screamed and moved.

“Damn these guys!”

It was black magic power that came from a strong presence approaching in front of me.

“Raise the palanquin.”

The neutral voice came from the large palanquin. There was the shadow of someone inside the palanquin. I reflexively shouted.

“Yoo Sangah-ssi, Gilyoung! Move back!”

A voice flowed from the palanquin.

“Move.”

The palanquin started to approach the group of people. The three rings of light mercilessly swept over the battlefield. Dozens of people died at once.

People stared with disbelief as their limbs disappeared and blood spurted. The start of the battle lines instantly became bare.

“Uwah...”

The terrified group members retreated. In the seething silence, everyone shut their mouths like dead mice.

The Tyrant King walked out of the palanquin.

“They really aren’t very good. The kings of the previous age...”

He held the Three Ring Loop in his hand, an item that released condensed magic power. It was a hidden item available in northern Seoul but it wasn't something the original Tyrant King had.

It must be true that he had some prophets.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Jung Youngho

**Age:** 33 years old.

**Constellation Support:** Great King Heoncheon Hongdo Gyungmun Wimbu

**Private Attribute:** Circus Member (Rare), Tyrant King (Hero)

**Exclusive Skills:** Grabbing Techniques Lv. 5, Sky Steps Lv. 3, Weapons Training Lv. 5.

**Stigma:** Palanquin Tank Lv. 5, Cheoyongmu Lv. 5, Tyranny (Lv. 4) *(TL: Cheoyongmu is a Korean mask dance that is the oldest surviving Korean court dance. It is also considered a shamanistic dance because it is performed to drive off evil spirits at the end of the year.)*

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 30, Strength Lv. 28, Agility Lv. 28, Magic Power Lv. 34 (+2)

**Overall Evaluation:** The worst tyrant on the Korean Peninsula has met disgruntled citizens. Small citizens dissatisfied with the social system won't ignore the opportunities he gives them.

\* 'Starter Pack' is currently applied.

\* A growth package is currently applied.

\* The New Scenarios package is currently applied.

+

The attributes window made sense. He was so strong because he used three packages. He also had a constellation who liked to walk dangerously on a tightrope.

An aura covered his entire body.

The Tyrant King was raising his sympathy with his sponsor to the limit. Several dokkaebis, including Bihyung, were staring at him from the air. They were prepared to make a 'plausibility request' at any time if he violated 'plausibility.'

"I certainly was a tyrant. But I am no longer a tyrant."

The Tyrant King, Great King Heoncheon Hongdo Gyungmun Wimbu.

“History isn’t scary. It is because from today onwards, I will make a new history for this land.”

The top tyrant of the Korean peninsula who wasn’t recorded as a ‘king’ in history.

“I am Yeonsangun (born Lee Yung)!” *(TL: Yeonsangun is considered the worst tyrant of the Joseon Dynasty, perhaps al of Korean history, notorious for launching two bloody purges of palace officials. Once overthrown, he didn’t receive a temple name.)*

A tremendous magic power emerged from the Tyrant King as sympathy with the sponsor reached its limit.

The group members in the way exploded. Level 30 magic power was inserted in the Three Ring Loop. It was very dangerous.

“Don’t back down!”

“Everyone fight!”

However, the Anti-Tyrant King Alliance was also unbelievable. Apart from the other kings, there was also the Maitreya King and the Earth Dragon King.

Once the kings united, the disadvantages were gradually reduced. The other kings raised the sympathy with their sponsor close to the limit. It wasn’t just the incarnations, the constellations were also desperate.

I looked down at Han Sooyoung’s head and asked, “You aren’t going to fight?”

Han Sooyoung laughed at my words.

“Laughing? I guess you still have room to spare,” I said.

“You... do you think it will go as you planned? Yeonsangun and the other kings have started to fight. Once they are exhausted, you will be able to take the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword. Right?”

It was pretty close.

“But it won’t work! Your act of spreading the text was quite good but I have been preparing for today much longer than you.”

“What nonsense are you saying?”

“In the end, the cliché will win.”

The voice of the intermediate dokkaebi was heard in the air.

[Huhu, everyone is fighting well. Great constellations, are you desperate? I see. The incarnations and constellations should work hard. Does everyone want to go up another narrative class?]

The battlefield quieted down at the dokkaebi’s voice.

[That’s why I’ve brought good news. From now on, the second qualification test will begin!]

+

[King’s Qualification]

1. {The owner of the throne should be braver than anyone else.}

-The Absolute Throne never wants a ‘weak king.’ To challenge the throne, you must own at least a black flag.

2. {He who dreams of the throne must desire it.}

-The number of ‘kings’ that can challenge the throne is decided. In order to gain the right to challenge it, you must remove the other kings around you.

+

The intermediate dokkaebi laughed.

[Please note that only five kings can challenge the final qualification of the Absolute Throne. The remaining number is... let’s see.]

[Number of kings remaining: 14.]

The people started murmuring.

“F-Fourteen?”

“Are there still kings outside?”

[For your reference, there are 12 kings currently inside the hidden dungeon.]

I was a bit surprised. There was so many kings in this dungeon. Well, I didn’t think I

would be the only 'hidden' king.

"Who is it? Who is the king that is hiding?"

The Tyrant King laughed at the confused people.

"Hahaha! It is very funny that you are hitting each other in the back of the head!"

"Now isn't the time to fight among ourselves! We must pay attention to the Tyrant King!"

It happened when the kings barely regained their sense of reason.

"Here! This guy is the king!" Han Sooyoung's head shouted to everyone. "I saw it! He has a flag!"

"What?"

This was really...

I quickly trampled on Han Sooyoung's head. Everyone's attention focused on me. It was the moment when the death of one of the 'remaining kings' was decided.

"If we kill him..."

I felt it was cheap. The plagiarist's plot was too shallow. Wait a minute, perhaps?

...How interesting. Was it like that?

I focused on the people secretly moving behind the kings. They were the loyal subjects that the kings cherished.

"Cough...!"

The thin knife cut off the head of a king.

[The number of remaining kings has been reduced.]

[Number of kings remaining: 12.]

The Prudent King and Fighting King were exhausted, while the Maitreya King and

Earth Dragon King were hit hard by the surprise attack. Even the Tyrant King was stabbed in the side and thighs by three men from behind.

“These damn people...!”

I realized who was behind this. The humans who betrayed their kings didn't bleed when their heads were cut off. The gems of the fallen kings were quickly taken by someone.

“The jewel! My jewel!!”

The star jewels were moved through the hands of the hidden ‘avatars’ and gathered in one person's hands.

“I told you. In the end, the cliché won.”

A beautiful girl moved through the air and laughed as she landed on a niche. Surely this wasn't the main body of the plagiarist writer?

...I hadn't expected a woman.

The seven jewels gathered in her hands emitted light.

[The Fake King Han Sooyoung has gathered all seven star jewels!]

[The seven star jewels are sacrificed to summon a new item.]

[Fake King Han Sooyoung is summoning the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword!]

In the end, the plagiarist writer became the master of the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

She was the Fake King. It was an attribute that matched amazingly well.

“Dokja-ssi. What should we do?”

“It is still okay.”

Yoo Sangah made a strange face at my blasé words.

“Is it okay to be so calm? That is a great item.”



That's right. The S+ grade item was great. But Yeonsangun's Three Ring Loop was also a S-grade item. The performance was a bit different but it wasn't that bad.

"Hahahahat! Die! Die!"

A dazzling magic power poured out of the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword and swept through the battlefield. However, people didn't die easily. People thought they were going to explode but they managed to neutralize her magic power.

Her magic power was weakened because she used a lot of avatars and above all, the three main kings were still alive.

The confused Han Sooyoung shouted, "W-What is this? Why is it so weak?"

"Kill her! Kill her and take away that sword!"

"U-Uwaaah! Back off! Back off!"

It turned out like this. Han Sooyoung was pushed back to where my party was located. I said to her, "The cliché has broken.

This is what usually happens."

"Shut up!"

"Do you want me to help you?"

"No need!"

Han Sooyoung cried out and waved her sword again. But she seemed to be getting pushed back. I wanted to say something to this silly girl. The weapon wasn't famous because it was strong, but because the original owner was strong.

"I will kill you!"

The Tyrant King recovered his confidence and started attacking, while the other kings started to fight as well.

The battle soon became a melee with no allies. By the way, it should be time for him to come...

Was he still wandering? The northern region of Seoul was far but it was enough time for him to return.

[Number of kings remaining: 11.]

The signboard in the air changed.

[Number of kings remaining: 10.]

Ah, indeed.

[Number of kings remaining: 9.]

He came.

“W-What?”

“Why is the number dwindling suddenly?”

The surrounding kings were filled with fear. The number of kings started decreasing for an unknown reason.

[Number of kings remaining: 8.]

The fear of the kings’ reached the limit as the number decreased to one digit.

“There is someone. Someone is killing the kings!”

On the other hand, there was someone rejoicing.

The Tyrant King.

“Hahaha! Who cares? You will also die!”

The Tyrant King was about to fire the Three Ring Loop again when the ceiling collapsed and the Tyrant King fell.

*Kwaaaaang!*

A formidable storm of magic power struck and the Tyrant King screamed painfully.

The enormous storm of magic power that disassembled all living things into particles destroyed the Tyrant King's body.

"Uhh... ahhh... uwaaack!"

Then.

[Number of kings remaining: 7.]

Only the cold appearance of a person remained in front of them. The people close to the unusual scene trembled and flopped down.

"W-What? What is this?"

A man had killed the Tyrant King in a single blow, like he was a bug. The explosion cleared and his appearance was gradually revealed. The surviving kings and dying kings, everyone looked at him with captivation.

Han Sooyoung's legs shook with fear and she retreated.

"Nonsense... this is nonsense!"

The words of her avatar suddenly came to mind. The strongest among the Seven Kings in Seoul was the Tyrant King. I previously thought so but these words weren't true.

So far, I had met five out of the Seven Kings, including Han Donghoon who didn't become a king because of the prophets.

Hermit King of Shadows, Han Donghoon.

King of Beauty, Min Jiwon.

The Maitreya King Cha Sangkyung.

Earth Dragon King Gu Daesung.

Tyrant King Jung Youngho.

Apart from the Neutral King, who hadn't appeared yet, there was still one person.

Then who was the remaining person? The answer was simple. In fact, I met him before any other kings.

A furious voice rang through the battlefield.

“Kim Dokja...”

I smiled and waved towards him. A large black flag flew behind the person heading towards me.

“You came...”

Of the Seven Kings of Seoul, the strongest was naturally the Supreme King, Yoo Jonghyuk.

# Chapter 69

## Master of the Throne (6)

Nevertheless, a main character was a main character. I sent him to Gangbuk Station but he already had a black flag.

If a non-representative took away the flag of a representative, the hidden scenario 'Revolutionary Road' would open. He knew this and killed a representative on the way here, making him a king.

Looking at Yoo Jonghyuk's current appearance, it seemed like Lee Jihye and Jung Heewon did a good job.

I took a few steps back and looked at Han Sooyoung. "Hey, quickly give me that sword."

"I-I don't want to."

"Do you want to die here?"

Han Sooyoung's eyes were shaken as Yoo Jonghyuk moved. I exclaimed, "Gilyoung!"

Lee Gilyoung's eyes turned white like he had been waiting. I heard a tearing sound and something pounding on the dungeon.

Then after a while. The sickle of a praying mantis flew through one wall.

[The 6th grade insect king, Titanoptera has appeared!]

Lee Gilyoung's ability was the best. The whole cave shook with the enormous power of the giant insect king. As Yoo Jonghyuk looked back, I struck Han Sooyoung.

"A-Ack...!"

Han Sooyoung groaned and let go of the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword. I picked up the sword as well as the flag hanging from Han Sooyoung's neck as a bonus.

[You have won the flag of the 'Hongik University' group.]

[Your purple flag has absorbed the cumulative achievements of the black flag.]

[Your purple flag has evolved into a black flag.]

[You are able to use the perks of the black flag.]

[Congratulations! You have completed the first king's qualification.]

[Number of kings remaining: 6.]

I ran straight towards the Tyrant King. The Tyrant King was lying down between a pile of stones, his body crushed like dough. It was terrible. He tried to kill everyone only to die in vain like this.

Han Sooyoung shouted from behind me. "You thief!"

I ignored her and quickly swept up the Tyrant King's items.

[The item 'Three Ring Loop' has been acquired.]

[The item 'Dragon Jar' has been acquired.]

The revival 'Dragon Jar' The Tyrant King obtained it by clearing the seven person dungeon.

"...Kim Dokja!"

Yoo Jonghyuk was chasing after me at a scary speed. Despite the fact that I had 30 agility, he narrowed the distance to me in an instant. I looked around and hid behind the nearest king.

"W-What?"

It was the king of Later Baekje, Gu Daesung.

"Kuaaaak!"

Yoo Jonghyuk's relentless blow cracked his head while Yoo Jonghyuk obtained his flag.

[The constellation 'Founder of Hannamgun' is looking at you.]

I felt sorry for Gyeon Hwon but it couldn't be helped. I promised to make it up to him next time.

At this time, I decided to stop running away.

“Jonghyuk, stop for a minute. Let’s talk.”

“That note...”

“The note?”

“My sister.”

It was only two words but I instantly understood. Fortunately, Lee Jihye handled things safely. The note was given to Yoo Jonghyuk at the right time.

“What about your sister?”

“Where did you hide my sister?”

“What are you talking about?”

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk is currently using Lie Detection Lv. 6.]

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk has confirmed that your words are false.]

“If you don’t tell me right away, you really will die.”

I knew it was true even without Lie Detection. The reason why Yoo Jonghyuk was like this was entirely due to my plot.

I drove him to go north to save his sister, causing him to waste time searching the north. Yoo Jonghyuk’s less worn-out personality in this third regression made the plan possible.

It couldn’t be helped, even if I was acting cowardly. If Yoo Jonghyuk, who was much stronger than the original third regression, ignored everything and engaged in the war of kings, this scenario would’ve ended at his pace.

Then I would never get the ending that I wanted.

“...Okay. Let’s put the sword down and talk. What if I was a real jerk?”

“Are you taking my family hostage?”

“That’s going overboard. Isn’t that just your words?”

The concept of a hostage didn’t exist for him in the first place. This guy could just die and go back.

“Then why did you do this?”

“Why do you think”

Yoo Jonghyuk noticed that I was buying time and his expression cooled. “I should’ve killed you at that time... then die.”

The moment that Yoo Jonghyuk raised his sword, a voice was heard from the air.

[Everyone here, please calm down. Why are you still fighting? Let’s see, you’ve met the qualifications.]

The intermediate dokkaebi appeared at this moment.

Yoo Jonghyuk also confirmed the number board floating in the air.

[Number of kings remaining: 5.]

[The ‘Last King’s Qualification’ has begun.]

The bodies of the remaining kings, including me and Yoo Jonghyuk, started to be forcibly moved through space.

“Kim Dok...!”

Yoo Jonghyuk reached out for me but it was too late.

I finally reached the last phase of this scenario.

[The qualified kings will move to the final testing place.]

The landscape started changing. It felt like my body was being sucked somewhere else. The next moment, *tung!* There was the sound of me bumping my head against something. A moment later, I became conscious again.

[You aren’t qualified to take part in the ‘Last King’s Qualifications.]



...What?

I looked around and saw that I was standing in the centre of Gwanghwamun. I had bumped into a barrier the size of a schoolyard. The centre contained the Absolute Throne, the last reward of this scenario.

Why couldn't I enter?

[Hahahat! This, this! You were only looking at the big picture and missed something important!]

I looked up at the sound of laughter and saw the ridiculing face of the intermediate dokkaebi. I thought he was playing tricks on me but then an unexpected message flashed.

[You have failed to occupy the 'target station' of the fourth scenario.]

[You must first take the target station to be qualified for the 'Last King's Qualifications'.]

[Your group's target station is Changsin Station.]

Ah... I was only thinking about the kings and forgot. I hadn't occupied it yet.

[The last phase can't be performed unless the previous phase is cleared properly. Did you think you could get away with it?]

There was already fighting going on inside the barrier. If this continued, everything I had done would be in vain. I thought I should run to Changsin Station before it was too late.

By the way... damn. Wouldn't all the scenarios end if I ran there?

"Dokja-ssi!"

Yoo Sangah was rushing over here while carrying the collapsed Lee Gilyoung. But there were more people with them. Huh?

"Heewon-ssi?"

Jung Heewon ran to this side while holding the hands of a unknown girl.

"Is my brother really here?" The girl asked.

“Yes. How many times do I have to say it?”

“But I’m hungry.”

Jung Heewon wasn’t supposed to be here right now. After saving a girl from the Gangbuk area of Seoul, she should wait at Changsin Station. That was Jung Heewon’s job in this scenario.

“Heewon-ssi, why are you here? I told you to wait at Changsin Station...”

“No, how long was I waiting? Besides, she has been hungry since morning. Aren’t you worried about your sister?”

At Jung Heewon’s words, the girl pointed to me and said, “That person isn’t my brother.”

“Eh?”

“He is uglier than my brother.”

Damn kid. Jung Heewon was surprised as she looked between me and the girl. “Eh? This isn’t Dokja-ssi’s sister? I thought that was why you asked me to save her.”

“No.”

“Then who is it?”

It was natural for Jung Heewon not to know. Who would think this girl would be the psychopath’s sister?

I heard a growling sound from the girl’s stomach. I listened to the sound and laughter emerged.

...Would my perfect plan collapse here?

“Dokja-ssi, where are you going?”

“I’m going to occupy Changsin Station.”

I had to challenge it, even if I was late. I wish there was a long-distance teleport scroll

but the intermediate dokkaebi wouldn't let me open the Dokkaebi Bag.

Then Jung Heewon looked at me and opened her mouth. "Why would you go there?"

"Huh?"

"Kid, bring that thing out. Didn't I give it to you before?"

"Yes!"

Yoo Jonghyuk's sister, Yoo Mia put her hand in her mouth. After a moment, her mouth became abnormally large and an unusual sized stone emerged. It was Yoo Mia's exclusive skill, Inventory. I moved towards the chunk of stone.

"What is this?"

"Don't you know?"

I examined the rough surface of the stone. Then I saw a small groove that could hold something.

...I never thought of this. Was this method possible? No one had tried this in Ways of Survival.

Jung Heewon shamelessly said, "Don't you need the flagpole to occupy the station?"

What type of ignorant human would think up an idea like this? Jung Heewon had cut up the floor that contained the flag holder of Changshin Station.

[The constellation 'Adventurer who Stands Up an Egg' admires Jung Heewon's idea.]

I tried to say something but fell silent.

"Why, is something wrong?"

"...No."

"Then what are you doing? Go ahead and insert the flag."

I nodded and pulled out the flag.

[You have occupied Changsin Station.]

[You have earned 2,000 coins as a reward for 'Struggle for the Flag.']

I really did it.

[Your group has occupied the target station.]

[Your body has moved to the battlefield of the 'Last King's Qualification.']

My consciousness flickered again. A message popped up as a king's qualification was added.

+

[King's Qualification]

1. {The owner of the throne should be braver than anyone else.}

-The Absolute Throne never wants a 'weak king.' To challenge the throne, you must own at least a black flag.

2. {He who dreams of the throne must desire it.}

-The number of 'kings' that can challenge the throne is decided. In order to gain the right to challenge it, you must remove the other kings around you.

3. {A single king stands alone without any help.}

-The king who can challenge the throne must be able to prove his strength was just his body.

+

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' is calmly watching the situation.]

[The constellation 'Bald General of Justice' is cheering for the upper-grade constellations.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is laughing.]

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' scoffs at the upper-grade constellations.]

The constellations had opposite reactions unlike other times. It was because the constellations had different ranks.

The gap between upper-grade and narrative-grade was like the difference between a child and an adult.

That's why the reaction of the constellations watching the broadcast differed. Like adults not paying attention to a child's game of hide-and-seek, this scenario was meaningless for constellations above narrative-grade.

But the upper-grade constellations were different.

In this scenario, the triumphant upper-grade constellation would climb to the absolute throne and build up their 'story.' This was why the upper-grade constellations were impatient once the King's Qualification scenario began.

I opened my eyes and the King's Battlefield began.

[From now on, all kings can't receive the support of their sponsor.

[From now on, the attack and defense of all items will be limited.]

[From now on, all skills, stigmas and special item options will be sealed.]

[From now on, the total stats of all kings will change to 10/10/10/10/10.]

[The Last King's Qualification will continue until one person is left.]

# Chapter 70

## A Kingless World (1)

The last king's test. It was an extreme trial that had to be overcome with your body only.

The floor of Gwanghwamun was a mess. The Absolute Throne was in the centre while the kings were fighting each other.

King of Beauty, Min Jiwon.

The Maitreya King Cha Sangkyung.

Supreme King Yoo Jonghyuk.

Then the middle-aged man in the corner... He was the Neutral King. The Neutral King raised his hands as he met my eyes.

[The Neutral King has abstained from fighting for the throne.]

As the name suggested, the Neutral King wasn't greedy for the throne. Only the remaining three were greedy.

One of the three was Yoo Jonghyuk so the fight should've ended in less than a minute. At least, if it was the original story.

"Die!"

Maitreya King Cha Sangkyung's leg split apart the air while Yoo Jonghyuk's kick struck Cha Sangkyung's abdomen.

"Kuk!"

However, Cha Sangkyung wasn't as damaged as expected. It was because all stats were changed to level 10. The skills were sealed so Yoo Jonghyuk had to win the battle with just his flesh memories.

Min Jiwon looked behind them and saw me. I nodded slightly at her.

“We meet again.”

“...Yes. I didn’t want to fight you if possible.”

Min Jiwon must’ve filled the other king’s qualifications if she came to this place. It was great. I honestly didn’t think she could survive until the end.

“If you don’t abstain, I will attack.”

“Try it. Do you think it will be easy?”

We have to fight with all our stats at level 10 with no skills or no stigma. It was too shabby compared to the kings who broke the city while fighting a while ago.

There was a loud noise and Cha Sangkyung screamed, “Cough! W-Why...?”

Cha Sangkyung rolled around painfully on the floor after being struck by Yoo Jonghyuk’s fist. It had been an equal fight until then but something was changing little by little.

Skills and stigmas couldn’t be used but Yoo Jonghyuk’s attacks were getting faster and harder. It wasn’t merely Yoo Jonghyuk’s combat sense.

Min Jiwon became surprised as she noticed.

“...How?”

If I remembered correctly, Yoo Jonghyuk knew the loophole of the last phase. Maybe these messages were currently rising in Yoo Jonghyuk’s mind.

[400 coins have been invested in physique.]

[400 coins have been invested in agility.]

[400 coins have been invested in strength.]

The funny thing was that this battlefield controlled everything except for one factor. It was the use of the coins.

[The constellation ‘ Lady of the Brocade Sleep’ questions the fairness of the scenario.]

The intermediate dokkaebi laughed.

[Haha, what is your question? It is a natural right to be able to use coins. The 'coins' are the hard-earned work of the incarnations. They worked so hard to gather coins that they should have a chance to use it.]

Yoo Jonghyuk was raising his stats using his coins.

[Oh, the stats increased with the coins will be reset after the scenario is over. So be careful! It is like throwing away coins into the air! Hahahat!]

Min Jiwon and Cha Sangkyung's complexions darkened once they heard the words of the intermediate dokkaebi. Perhaps they didn't have much coins remaining. It was natural. They wouldn't be able to save coins in the battlefield between kings.

But Yoo Jonghyuk was different. Yoo Jonghyuk grew by breaking through all types of hidden scenarios from the beginning and always carried an appropriate amount of coins in reserve.

The original third round Yoo Jonghyuk had around 30,000 coins at this point. Now he had more coins than the original story so... it should be around 40,000?

There was the loud sound of somebody being hit and Cha Sangkyung's body flew through the air.

[The Maitreya King Cha Sangkyung is out of combat.]

Yoo Jonghyuk looked at the nearby Min Jiwon. She jumped with surprised and hurriedly raised both hands.

"...I will abstain."

['King of Beauty' Min Jiwon has abstained from the battle.]

Finally, Yoo Jonghyuk turned towards me. His angry eyes calmed down. It was understandable. If he took the Absolute Throne, he could control all kings and it wouldn't be a problem to get his sister back from me.

But would that happen?



“Yoo Jonghyuk.”

We aimed out swords at each other. I couldn't use any skills so I had to rely on my flesh memories and my stats.

For the first time, Yoo Jonghyuk's blade was visible. It must be a fake. He was estimating my stats and how much coins I had left.

He was truly a prudent person. It was a trick to win by investing the minimum amount of coins.

However, his pride would cause his defeat this time. It was because there wasn't any king in Seoul who had more coins than me right now.

[Coins Possessed: 80,850 C]

Who would think that I had 80,000 coins? I laughed at Yoo Jonghyuk who was running towards me.

“I'll hit you gently so please don't die.”

Now was the time to spend big. I invested a large number of coins into 'strength.'

[4,000 coins have been invested in strength.]

[Strength Lv. 10 -> Strength Lv. 20]

[5,000 coins have been invested in strength.]

[Strength Lv. 20 -> Strength Lv. 30]

[6,000 coins have been invested in strength.]

[Strength Lv. 30 -> Strength Lv. 40]

.

.

[11,000 coins have been invested in strength.]

[Strength Lv. 80 -> Strength Lv. 90]

[12,000 coins have been invested in strength.]

[Strength Lv. 90 -> Strength Lv. 100]

[72,000 coins have been consumed.]

[Your 'strength' has broken through the limits of a human.]

[The achievement has been processed! You are the first to achieve a three digit level in strength.]

[30,000 coins have been acquired as a reward.]

I adjusted the power in my fist. A strike containing 100 strength was enormous. It would be difficult if I accidentally killed Yoo Jonghyuk.

I felt the space around my fist bend slightly. According to Ways of Survival, all stats had different destructive power from the moment they broke through the three digits.

How did it feel? Of course, it felt like I was a killer. It felt like my fist was holding a check for a billion won.

Yoo Jonghyuk's eyes widened as he hurriedly used coins. However, it was too late. There was a sound like a sonic boom.

Yoo Jonghyuk shot into the sky like a baseball being hit by a bat.

Unfortunately, it was impossible to hit a home run in this stadium. The flying Yoo Jonghyuk hit a barrier, bounced in the opposite direction and hit another barrier and landed on the ground after repeating this ping-pong action five or six times.

...Surely he wasn't dead? I ran towards Yoo Jonghyuk with a bit of confusion in my heart.

Damn, why did I do this? I should've used a bit less strength. I carefully pulled Yoo Jonghyuk off the ground. Then.

Ah, this was a main character. Yoo Jonghyuk was staring at me with wide open eyes. He was still conscious despite being hit by a punch filled with 100 strength?

"...Yoo Jonghyuk?"

"..."

"Jonghyuk?"

"..."

His eyes didn't move. This bastard, did he faint with his eyes open? Did I hit him that hard? No, I would have to keep hitting Yoo Jonghyuk in the future.

"Well, you will be in trouble if you keep acting as usual. How can you say to kill me every time you see me?"

I slapped his swollen face. Somehow, I felt his eyes move whenever I hit him, causing my to feel nervous...

In any case, he was breathing. The bones in his body were broken and he was bleeding...

It was a situation where he couldn't use the Recovery skill so his life could be in danger.

I had to do my work quickly.

[Supreme King Yoo Jonghyuk is out of combat.]

[Congratulations! You have passed all the tests of the Absolute Throne.]

The ward in the air slowly disappeared.

[The temporary stats added by the coins are reset.]

[All constraints on the kings have disappeared.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' has his hair standing up from excessive carbonic acid.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' applauds your actions.]

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' admires your patience.]

[4,500 coins have been sponsored.]

I also heard the messages of the upper-grade constellations.

[The constellation 'Lady of the Brocade Sleep' is regretful.]

[The constellation 'One-eyed Maitreya' has thrown away his eyepatch.]

[The constellation 'Founder of Hannamgun' feels a grudge towards you.]

Of course, the kings of the three kingdoms blamed me. Thanks to me, they missed an opportunity to jump to the 'narrative' grade.

[...Oh, a surprising winner has appeared.]

The intermediate dokkaebi looked somewhat dissatisfied. He hadn't expected me to win. Yet I had won.

[Well... good. This is the result. Now, I am informing all incarnations of Seoul. Just now, a new owner of the Absolute Throne was born!]

I stopped the intermediate dokkaebi who was about to launch the system messages.

“Wait a minute.”

[...What do you want?]

The dokkaebi’s eyebrows twitched.

“You are too hasty. I haven’t even sat on the throne yet. Shouldn’t you ask me first?”

[You will go up now so does it matter?]

I approached the Absolute Throne. At this moment, I felt all constellations observing the Seoul Dome focus on me.

The Absolute Throne floating in the sky slowly descended towards me. It showed off its golden charm like it had been waiting for me for a long time.

I asked the intermediate dokkaebi, “What can I do with this?”

[You can do anything to humans.]

It was short but scary.

[The Absolute Throne is just the name of the item. As long as you sit on the throne, you can become an omnipotent power. No one on this earth can stand against you and everyone will bow before you!]

The people looked at me enviously after hearing the dokkaebi’s explanation.

It was natural to envy me. Everybody had run to this place for this reason.

[The constellation ‘Lady of the Brocade Sleep’ is licking her lips.]

Even the constellations...

It was really pitiful and strange. They felt envious despite knowing the real identity of the item. I really disliked the constellations.

“Is that all?”

[...Huh?]

“It is too good that it is ridiculous. I will enjoy absolute power on the land that I control.”

[Isn't it right to receive a reward in return for suffering? How many times have you almost died due to the throne...?]

“Ah, so the throne can act beyond the constraints of plausibility?”

[What?]

“You are good at lying. Aren't you a dokkaebi? Won't the Bureau say something if you scam me like this?”

The expression of the intermediate dokkaebi hardened. On the other side, Bihyung was looking at me with a pale face. [I am tired of this talk.

I have to finish the scenario. Now sit on the throne. If you talk nonsense one more time, I will break the Absolute Throne.]

“...Ah, you can do that? Then go ahead.”

[Huh?]

I looked at the dokkaebi and the people staring before opening my mouth.

“I will never sit on this Absolute Throne.”

A terrible silence swept through Gwanghwamun.

# Chapter 71

## A Kingless World (2)

There was the sound of thunder in the sky and it started to rain. Light rose from the Absolute Throne to touch the sky. Thick rain clouds swirled around this light. It was a sign of the fifth scenario, the Great Hall.

The intermediate dokkaebi opened his mouth amidst the rain.

[...What did you say just now?]

“The throne, I won’t accept it.”

[I don’t know why you’re doing such a thing. Don’t you think it will benefit you to gain more coins at this time? Didn’t you just use a lot of coins? You should be rewarded. If you don’t have the power of the Absolute Throne, the Seoul Dome will never survive the fifth scenario.]

The people in Gwanghwamun screamed at me once they heard the dokkaebi’s words.

“What? What are you thinking?”

“Don’t be stupid and sit down quickly!”

“Damn, I will sit...!”

The dokkaebi kept talking like he thought it was going his own way.

[That throne can give you what you want. Just sitting on the throne will build up your ‘narrative’ and the sponsor you have contracted with will rise. Don’t you know what this means?]

In fact, I could hear the outcry of the constellations in my ears.

[The constellation ‘Adventurer who Stands Up an Egg’ wants to be your sponsor.]

[The constellation 'Seo Ae Il Pil' wants to be your sponsor.]

.....

[500 coins have been sponsored.]

The intermediate dokkaebi continued to speak in a cold voice.

[I will warn you in advance. I'm not like the low level dokkaebis. Don't think that flimsy tricks will work on me.]

I looked at the Absolute Throne. As the dokkaebi said, the fifth scenario would be difficult to clear without the Absolute Throne.

However, I knew what the dokkaebi wasn't saying. If I used this 'Absolute Throne' once, I would never be able to reach the end of the scenarios. In the original work, Yoo Jonghyuk noticed this only at the 14th regression.

The 'Absolute Throne' was such an item.

"Why aren't you becoming king?"

An agitated person appeared among the crowd. The man breathed out and spat at me like I insulted him.

I turned towards the man. "That is what I want to ask. Why do you want me to become king?"

"What?"

"What will you do if I kill you after you become king?"

The lips of the man stiffened for a moment. I continued watching the people around us. "All of you are the same. Have you already forgotten? We originally didn't live in a kingdom. Why are you acting like citizens of a kingdom?"

Why didn't I want to be king? It was simple.

"I don't want to be the king of ugly humans like you." I looked up at the sky while speaking. "In addition, I don't want ugly constellations like you to be my sponsor."

Then I looked at the throne.

“Thus, I will never sit on the Absolute Throne. But.” I pulled out my blade. “I won’t allow other people to sit on the throne.”

Once someone sat down, it meant that no one else could sit. The intermediate dokkaebi’s cold eyes flashed.

[You should be careful. I’m not that patient...]

I continued to speak as I stared at the dokkaebi.

“How long will you continue to be drawn helplessly into the dokkaebi’s scenarios? Does anyone know what it means to sit on the Absolute Throne?”

I knew how much the people who were once ‘obedient’ would pay to leave this obedience.

“The constellations of the Korean peninsula. It is the same for you. I know that not all constellations are the same. Some constellations are low and some are high.”

There was an invisible rank among constellations.

Just as some constellations watched the incarnations, other constellations watched the constellations. To be precise, the low constellations were the ones being watched.

“But is it enough now? How long will you turn this land into a playground for unhappy guests?”

[The constellation ‘One-eyed Maitreya’ is immersed.]

“Working up to build up history to become a constellation and then building up narratives to become narrative-grade constellations... then what? The higher the sky, the brighter the star? How long will you continue using the descendants of this land for your own sake?”

[The constellation ‘Lady of the Brocade Sleep’ is silent.]

At this moment, the intermediate dokkaebi acted.

[I can’t stand it any longer.]



A system message arrived at the same time.

[A new sub scenario has arrived!]

+

[Sub Scenario – Forced Succession]

**Category:** Sub

**Difficulty:** B

**Clear Conditions:** Suppress the incarnation ‘Kim Dokja’, who doesn’t want to sit on the throne and place him on the throne.

**Time Limit:** 30 minutes

**Compensation:** 6,000 coins

**Failure:** —

+

Yes, I thought it would turn out like this.

The people who had been shaken by my words were now approaching.

In the end, it was just like the dokkaebi said. The people present and me as well. No matter what I said, they would sell their conscience for a few coins.

Of course, this didn’t apply to everyone.

“Pass me if you can.” A woman appeared in front of me. People faltered at her growled out words. It was Jung Heewon.

“No matter what the world is like, there is something you shouldn’t forget.” Yoo Sangah suddenly approached. Lee Gilyoung was standing behind me with a hammer like he had been waiting. Jung Minseob and Lee Sungkook also came forward.

“...Sometimes, Representative-nim is more like the protagonist than Yoo Jonghyuk.”

“Yoo Jonghyuk isn’t this crazy...”

There were also surprising people.

“Just this once, I will help you.”

“Your words are convincing.”

They were King of Beauty Min Jiwon and Maitreya King Cha Sangkyung. I didn't know which of my words had moved their hearts. However, it was clear that something had changed. Even so, it was only a handful.

[You are playing well... what are all of you doing? Pull him down now!]

People started running towards the throne. Jung Heewon pushed through the people around me and asked, "Dokja-ssi, do you have an idea?"

"Yes."

"What should we do?"

"Buy me some time. I have to destroy this throne."

The length of the new scenario was contained in this throne. I pulled out a sword causing someone to cry out.

"The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword!"

The S+ grade Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

However, it was an item that could be changed into a star relic if certain conditions were satisfied. It was because the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was an item made with the soul of a constellation.

[Ganpyeongui's special option 'Echo of the Stars' has been activated.]

['Echo of the Stars' allows you to ask for the help of a constellation.]

"I'll call a constellation."

[The great constellations hear your voice flowing through the stars.]

I called out to the constellations like I had memorized a spell.

"I want the first star of the Big Dipper."

The Greedy Wolf star (Dubhe).

"I want the second star of the Big Dipper."

The Great Gate star (Merak).

“I want the third star of the Big Dipper.”

The Blessing star (Phecda).

“I want the fourth star of the Big Dipper.”

The Literate Turn star (Megrez).

“I want the fifth star of the Big Dipper.”

The Clean and Pure star (Alioth).

“I want the sixth star of the Big Dipper.”

The Military Turn star (Mizar).

[The star navigation has begun.]

[The six constellations are looking at you.]

The thousands of constellations disappeared and my mind became heavy like a crowded subway. I felt dizzy while blood flowed from my nose and ears. It was hard to even think. My brain became overloaded the moment I contacted six constellations at the same time. The Great Bear stars started talking.

[What are you thinking?]

[You called all of us.]

[Your mind will be completely destroyed.]

[Why call us?]

[Why don't you go the easy path...]

[Instead of the thorny path?]

However, I didn't stop. Yes, one more constellation needed to be called if I wanted to use the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword. But there were no constellations left on

the Sky Disc.

[You have exhausted the number of times that Ganpyeongui can be used.]

I pulled out the Dragon Jar that I got from the Tyrant King and dissolved something in it.

The 7 person dungeon, the dissolving jar. I put two items in the jar.

“I will sacrifice the S-grade Three Ring Loop and the S-grade Ganpyeongui to call one more constellation.”

[The ‘Dissolve’ power of the Dragon Jar has shown its strength.]

[The S-grade Three Ring Loop has disappeared as a sacrifice.]

[The S-grade Ganpyeongui has one more use.]

I once again used Ganpyeongui and called one last constellation.

“I want the seventh star of the Big Dipper.”

The Broken Army star (Alkaid).

Seven stars filled the air. The seven stars that made up the Big Dipper were all gathered. At the same time, the seven stars spoke to me.

[What do you want from us?]

“I want to cut off the signs of the constellations. Lend me your sword.”

[...Do you know what this means?]

“I know.”

I did this despite being well aware of the risk.

The final reward of the fourth scenario was the Absolute Throne.

The throne was an item that borrowed the power of a ‘god of the world.’

It would be very convenient if I got the throne. I would be able to put restrictions on

Yoo Jonghyuk and the enemies threatening me would disappear.

But Seoul would surely be eliminated. It would be a complete destruction without any salvation or miracles.

It was the price to be paid for borrowing the power of the throne. In order to obtain the ending I wanted, no one could take this throne.

[Even the heavenly constellations are afraid of the founder of the throne.]

[But you, a human, wants to challenge the owner of this thing?]

“I can do it with your help. And I’m not fighting against the owner. I just want to cut the connection between the owner and this thing.”

[It is likely that you can’t afford it.]

[You will die.]

“It is something that I’ve decided. Then I will start now.”

The seven stars were silent. Some time passed. The Big Dipper shone brightly and their signs were engraved onto the sword.

[I shall respect your will.]

[Even if you die here.]

[We will remember you.]

A dazzling light wrapped around the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword and it started to burn with bright flames.

[The S+ grade Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword has evolved into the star relic ‘Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.’]

The star relic Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was originally a ceremonial sword. It was a sword to cut off evil energy and prevent disasters.

I swung the sword towards the Absolute Throne. There was a loud sound and fire

flared.

The Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword was one of the few items that could break the link that a constellation had to a star relic.

There was a tearing sound in the air.

As if it started to notice something, an ominous black light floated above the Absolute Throne. I swung it a few more times and the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword started to collapse. Now I had to believe in the Big Dipper stars. Yoo Sangah cried out, “Dokja-ssi! Quickly!”

I wielded the sword like a madman. I ignored the breaking blade and continued to hit the throne. Sparks flashed and the blade broke.

Then finally.

[The constellation linked to the star relic ‘Absolute Throne’ has disappeared.]

[The ‘Unknown God’ has noticed a change in this world.]

The Absolute Throne became an ordinary chair and lost its light. The intermediate dokkaebi’s angry voice was heard.

[You lowlifes can’t grasp who you are dealing with...!]

[The sub scenario has ended.]

People stopped moving. The scenario was over so they didn’t have to continue. The Big Dipper stars told me.

[Incarnation, prepare for the flooding of probabilities.]

As soon as I heard the voice, blood poured from my mouth.

It felt like something was pulling at my presence. An enormous power that seemed to tear at my flesh surrounded me. I struggled to regain my mind. It was going to be okay.

The ‘probability’ would become ‘plausibility’. I tried my best to make everything plausible. Thus, I could overcome this.

I barely held onto consciousness. Then a star in the distant night sky shone quietly.

[The constellation 'Maritime War God' is looking at you.]

It was a calm, lonely but gentle gaze.

[The constellation 'Bald General of Justice' is looking at you.]

Then two.

[The constellation 'Last Hero of Hwangsanbeol' is looking at you.]

Three.

[The constellation 'Lady of the Brocade Sleep' is looking at you.]

.....

The intermediate dokkaebi called out when he saw the messages from the constellations.

[Why...?]

Every time a star was added, my pain diminished a little bit. I realized that the constellations were sharing the 'probabilities' that I had to bear. The 'story that isn't plausible' became a 'plausible story' with the consent of many stars. Numerous stars were wrapping me in their light. The Big Dippers also lent me their strength.

[Is this the story that you wanted to show?]

I wanted to answer but I didn't have the power.

[We will watch you, king of the world without kings.]

The chaotic Seoul night sky. I looked at the stars that sent me light.

[The constellation 'King Heungmu the Great' is looking at you.]

[The constellation 'One-eyed Maitreya' is looking at you.]

.....

All the upper-grade constellations of Seoul were shining towards me. There were

many stars. Still, it wasn't enough to overturn the dark night sky.

I looked up at the turbulent clouds that filled the Great Hall.

[The fourth scenario is forcibly ended.]

[There was an unscheduled incident so it will take time to settle the scenario.]

I wiped the blood pouring from my nose and the intermediate dokkaebi approached.

[You have made the worst choice. You will regret what you did today for the rest of your life. I will make sure of it.]

I laughed as my vision blurred. The dokkaebi's words meant that I won the game.

[You have accomplished a non-existence achievement.]

[Your new narrative is created.]

[The narrative 'King of a Kingless World' has been born.]

[You have obtained the possibility of a stigma.]

I didn't have a next 'regression.' I would reach the end of the story in this world.



# Chapter 72

## A Kingless World (3)

The first narrative was built. With this, the main goal of the fourth scenario was achieved.

“What the hell is going to happen now?”

“No, why did you break the throne?”

There were people who were bewildered by the situation while others were scared about what the angry dokkaebi would do.

From the perspective of the people present, I was a sinner who made the fifth scenario difficult. Some people cried out to the dokkaebi.

“Make the Absolute Throne again! I’ll join the scenario again!”

“This time I will be the master of the throne!”

[The scenarios that have already ended can’t be changed by anyone. Anything that happens to you from now on is the fault of that human.]

The intermediate dokkaebi’s answer was cold.

The dokkaebi pointed towards me while the wet shoulders of the gathered people shook.

[A world with no kings? Okay. Let’s try it once. I will see how well you can survive without a focal point.]

The intermediate dokkaebi flicked his finger. Then the people in Gwanghwamun started to disappear like smoke. People screamed and ran away.

“What? What is this all of a sudden?!”

...This was an unscheduled development.

I looked back and saw Jung Heewon, Yoo Sangah, Lee Gilyoung and the others calling out to me.

“Dokja-ssi!”

The next moment, Yoo Sangah disappeared. Then Lee Gilyoung and Jung Heewon. Next was Jung Minseob and Lee Sungkook. One minute after the dokkaebi flicked his finger, I was the only one remaining in Gwanghwamun. The intermediate dokkaebi looked at me with a creepy smile.

[Please keep this in mind. If this world is destroyed, it is all because of you.]

The moment I wanted to speak, there was a ringing sound.

My body shook and I was moved elsewhere. It was accompanied by severe nausea and a headache. I lost consciousness because I had consumed a great deal of energy.

[10,000 coins have been earned as settlement for the fourth scenario.]



I slept for quite a long time because I was tired from excessive contact with the constellations.

I even dreamt. It was a dream from before the end began.

*–Hey, aren't you awake?*

The moment I heard the voice, I realized it was my high school days. They were the days when I was beaten up by the school gangsters.

...Yes. There were times like this. It was a childish dream but I became furious when I thought about it again.

*–What? Why are you looking at me like that? Do you want to kill someone?*

My head fell back from his slap.

Blood flowed from my cracked lips and my tingling cheeks caused a feeling of shame.

Arms, legs, and shoulders. Pain came from all these places. It might be a dream but it was more painful than reality. Maybe it was because there was no Fourth Wall here.

*–Why? If it is too much, stab me. Do you want to appear in the same newspapers as your mother?*

My clenched fists trembled but I couldn't hit him. At that time, what had I been thinking?

'...If only I was Yoo Jonghyuk.'

Yes, that's right. This was what I thought in my misery. It was the time when I was reading Ways of Survival.

I say the name on the uniform's name badge.

Song Minwoo.

What was he doing now? I remember that he had gone to university and was working well. That was the first time I thought the world was unfair. I didn't know if he was still alive.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is activated!]

My dream collapsed and I was left in the dark again.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 3 has been activated!]

Voices started to overlap.

{Hey, can you hear me? Are you okay?}

{Representative-nim?}

{Dokja-ssi, where are you?}

They were the familiar voices of people I knew.

The words were conveyed through the ‘third person perspective’ of Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint’s third stage. I knew who the voices belonged to without looking.

{“Ah... why here? Dokja-ssi? Can you hear me?”}

There was a bar with various types of wine. Jung Heewon was frowning and sighing.

{“A love letter... I will meet that ahjussi again... damn, why did I fall to the school?”}

Lee Jihye was touching her cheeks as if she had been hit by someone.

{How come... why... here...?}

Lee Hyunsung was trapped in a nearby military base.

...I could roughly guess what happened based on people’s reactions.

The people in Gwanghwamun seemed to be moved to places they had an association with. That’s why Lee Jihye was at a school while Lee Hyunsung was sent to a military base. Lee Hyunsung was the most pathetic one.

Maybe it was the damn intermediate dokkaebi’s doing.

He created a situation where the incarnations were scattered all over the place. No matter how irrelevant it was to the main scenario, the intermediate dokkaebi would surely be reprimanded.

I looked at the confused people and muttered.

‘I’m fine so take care of yourself. I will see you soon.’

They couldn’t hear me but I hoped the words would reach them.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 3 has ended.]

I slowly returned to consciousness as my eyelids opened. Black clouds were still swirling over Seoul like a black hole.

I got up and looked around. It was a panoramic view of Seoul. It was a place where skyscrapers and high-rise buildings could be seen.

That reminded me, I should be moved to a place related to me. At first glance, it looked like the rooftop of a high-rise building in Seoul...

“This place...?”

Damn, I thought it was possible but I really didn't want to come here.

[A few constellations are looking forward to the words you will say to yourself.]

“...Mino Soft?

This was the rooftop of the company I worked for, Mino Soft.

[A few constellations are disappointed.]

[The constellations who don't like to be rushed are pleased.]

When I saw the indirect messages that came to my mind, I felt that the constellations focusing on me had expanded after I broke the Absolute Throne.

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' threatens the newly appeared constellations.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' is coughing at the pretentious people.]

Why did I come here? A street in Seoul without any cars. The offices with the lights turned off.

I felt nostalgia as I saw these familiar buildings. It was the first time I went to work in a month.

I felt really weird when I remembered coming up to the rooftop with Deputy Yoon after being scolded by Team Leader Han. When previously I had been testing new games, now I was cutting people with a blade.

Was Deputy Yoon still alive?

I turned my head and saw messages flashing in the air.

[There are 10 days before the start of the fifth scenario.]

The scenarios were flowing as I expected. If the Absolute Throne was destroyed, Seoul

Dome would get a respite for 10 days.

The fifth scenario, the Great Hall.

During this grace period, I had to find a way to clear the fifth scenario without the Absolute Throne.

[A sub scenario is in progress to supplement the interlude.]

+

[Sub Scenario – Survival Activities]

**Category:** Sub

**Difficulty:** C+

**Clear Conditions:** Survive for 10 days in the ruined city. You should eat three meals a day and get at least six hours of sleep a day. Don't forget to pay 500 coins per day before going to sleep every night. There will be a clear penalty if you violate any of these three rules.

**Duration:** 10 days

**Compensation:** None

**Failure:** Death

\* This is a scenario where a 'coin event' is applied.

\* All monsters in the scenario have a certain probability of dropping coins.

+

I roughly knew how things had gone. The existing scenario was completely destroyed so they hastily put together a sub scenario.

Furthermore, it overlapped with a coin payment event. I thought they were going to do it soon but I hadn't expected it to start already.

A survival fee of 500 coins a day... it was a scenario that couldn't be cleared without a coin event.

Anyway, now I had to move. I couldn't miss out on the chance to replenish my coins.

Then people's voices were heard from below the roof.

"Drag it! Quickly!"

I looked down and saw armed people entering the building, with others behind them.

Mino Soft was located near Seocho-gu. But in my memories, there were no 'king' forces in the Seocho area.

...Then who were they? I carefully observed the armed people and realized something.

Yes, they were the 'wanderers'. Each person had a different way of living in this destroyed world.

Someone would become 'king' and others would become 'the people.' Someone else would become a 'wanderer' without any affiliation.

And Seocho was the land of wanderers.

I turned on my smartphone to look up the information on this area. Unfortunately, I was out of battery. I needed to find a place to recharge the battery or find a spare battery...

I opened the roof door and went downstairs. I passed through the president's office, the planning department and the finance department. I walked through the office of the QA team that I had worked in for a while when I stopped.

It was fair to say that my memory was quite good. I went into the office and opened the drawers one by one.

It was because I thought a spare battery might be left behind. At that time, someone entered with a flashlight.

I reflexively pulled out my sword but there was a strange noise.

"Eh?"

...?

"D-Dokja-ssi? It is Dokja-ssi!"

Then I saw the man's face.

"Deputy Yoon?"

"Ahh, you're alive! You are alive!"

It was Deputy Yoon of the QA team.



“It was really terrible.”

I heard from Deputy Yoon about what happened at Mino Soft. To be exact, it was what happened after I got off from work.

“The first scenario started for all the people on the night shift.”

Deputy Yoon spoke while holding his nose.

The corridor of the company was filled with rotting body odor and maggots. Some of the bodies had faces of people I knew but I didn't see any mourning or sadness on Deputy Yoon's expression.

“Do you know? That guy over there, Team Manager Kim, I killed him. Why, that bastard... I stabbed his neck with a ballpoint pen and blood... it really was like a game.”

“...Deputy Yoon.”

“S-Sorry. Is it uncomfortable talking about this? Haha.”

It was a natural change but I felt bitter seeing Deputy Yoon's changed appearance. No... maybe this was what Director Yoon was like now.

“Are you alone here?”

“Huh? Ahh, I'm not alone. By the way, where was Dokja-ssi?”

“Ah, I...”

“I didn't see you in the company. What group are you affiliated with? Where you somewhere else?”

“Yes, well... Something similar. I was originally on the Gwanghwamun side of the bridge when...”

Deputy Yoon didn't listen to the end as he interrupted.



“Aha, I see. Dokja-ssi, your luck is really bad.”

“...Huh?”

“There is no need to pass through all the scenarios. Don’t you know? If you hide well and use moderate tricks, most scenarios will be broken by other people. There is no need to risk your life. Haha, it is very comfortable despite the world being like this.”

It was true. If you became a ‘wanderer’ who didn’t belong to anyone, you could get rid of some scenario that must be cleared and have the main scenarios cleared by someone else. There were many such people in Seoul Dome.

Their problem was that if you lived in hiding and were caught by surrounding groups, you would die. There was no prey as good as the ‘wanderers’ moving alone.

“You don’t have to worry. Wanderers also have a lot of power. Is there a need to be a king to build power?”

We exited Mino Soft. People were crowded around the company and there were a bunch of wanderers gathered. Some of them were seen moving kidnapped people. At this time, one armed man asked, “Yoon Sangho-ssi, who is this?”

“Ah, he is one of my coworkers. We met by chance.”

“Hrmm... a wanderer? No one from a group is accepted. Do you know?”

Deputy Yoon nodded lightly and the man passed by us. I looked at the man and asked, “Who is this person?”

“The manager of a ‘coin farm.’”

“Coin farm?”

“Ah... Dokja-ssi doesn’t know.”

For a moment, a dismal expression appeared on Deputy Yoon’s face.

Coin farm... that reminded me of something. But these guys already started it?

“Look here.”

There were two people trapped in cages placed at regular intervals, like it was a zoo or police station. The wanderers around them screamed with excitement.

“Hey! Are you kidding me? Fight harder! Who will give you coins if you look like this?”

Inside the cage, two people were fighting each other. Blood splashed, eyes were pulled out and a man with guts hanging out cried out like an animal.

[The constellation who likes the Colosseum is delighted.]

I looked closely and there were several such cages. Not all of the cages contained fighting.

There was one cage with a naked woman and several men inside, while another cage contained a lone woman, like the men had already finished with her. I could hear pained moans and cries from all corners.

Outside the cages, the wanderers holding their penises were laughing.

“Hey, how are you? Good? Come out quickly!”

“Next is my turn you bastard!”

[The constellation who likes excitement is delighted.]

Deputy Yoon opened his mouth.

“In the game industry, consumers were the king. In Mino Soft, the president was the king. Dokja-ssi, who is the king in this new world?”

“...Are you depending on the sponsorship of the constellations?”

“Yes. Sometimes there are crazy constellations like this. The most stimulating the sight, the more coins that the constellations will give. It is like the star balloons. We get coins from these people and in return, we provide them with food to survive.” *(TL: Star balloons are the way of donating on Korean video streaming sites)*

Deputy Yoon threw a chocolate bar into one cage. The woman behind bars cried out and grabbed for it.

There were those in the world who first identified the system and figured out how to exploit it. The 'coin farm' was the structure that those who first understood the world devised in order to take advantage of the system.

"I see people from our company..."

"They were from our company."

I realized for certain after hearing his cold tone. The 'Deputy Yoon' that I knew from Mino Soft, he didn't exist in this world anymore.

"Hey! There are new slaves! Imprison them!"

"Yes!"

The slaves were moved to the prisons. I was stunned to see a familiar face among them.

Deputy Yoon smiled.

"Oh, there is a new one? Hey! Strip her and bring her to the cage!"

A petite person with white skin. Fine black hair that fell down to the shoulders and slightly raised eyebrows.

I rubbed my eyes but there was no doubt. The First Apostle, Plagiarist Han Sooyoung was here.

# Chapter 73

## A Kingless World (4)

Han Sooyoung was thrown into a cage.

She was unconscious and probably lacking magic power after I took the flag from her.

Han Sooyoung must've been moved to the area near here. She was a writer so she might have a management or publishing company nearby.

"Aren't you quite good looking? Hey, you haven't touched her already have you?"

"No. I know that the constellations are all gathered here."

[A constellation who likes obscenity is excited.]

[A few constellations have eyes that are shining in a lascivious manner.]

White underwear was revealed by Han Sooyoung's torn jeans. There were men already playing rock paper scissors.

I stared at Han Sooyoung beyond the bars. No matter how I looked, there were no signs that anything happened.

.....

This woman would be a hindrance if she was left alive. She was the one who knew the most about this world, apart from me.

The story had completely changed from the third or fourth regression from the first quarter of the story and the knowledge she had might be obsolete, but...

The moment I thought this, I shuddered with disgust at myself.

...Why was I worrying about this?

Killing someone because they would be dangerous in the future. Who should I save

because they would be useful in the future?

I wasn't Yoo Jonghyuk to be thinking about these things.

"Do you want to do it Dokja-ssi?"

Deputy Yoon laughed as he saw me staring intently. It was an expression that said 'I can help you'.

"If you promise me one thing, I will let Dokja-ssi do her first. How about it?"

"...What do you want me to promise?"

"You have a group, right? Please introduce me to Dokja-ssi's group. We will soon start expanding our forces. Looking at Dokja-ssi's items... it is a pretty big group?"

I stared at Deputy Yoon and said, "I can introduce you if you like. But I want you to stop this."

"Huh? Haha, Dokja-ssi. What does that mean?"

"Let that woman go."

Deputy Yoon's eyebrows twitched because he knew it wasn't a joke.

"Hmm... Dokja-ssi. What is wrong with treating people like this? If you have survived to this point, don't you already know?"

"..."

"I have been watching Dokja-ssi for a long time. I knew that if it was Dokja-ssi, you could survive anywhere."

There was a strange ridicule in Deputy Yoon's expression.

"Aren't you always reading web novels alone? You always commute to work in a gloomy fashion. Sometimes you would talk to me and a few other colleagues. They were good people like Yoo Sangah-ssi."

"What does that have to do with this?"

“Dokja-ssi is enjoying the situation right now. Isn’t that right?”

Enjoying it? It was like aiming a dagger at my heart from a completely different angle.

Deputy Yoon grabbed my shoulders.

“I am also like Dokja-ssi. We are on the same QA team. I heard the same nagging every time and lived with their contempt. Do you remember what the other departments called us? The training dummy team. We are cheap people who don’t have any specs. We just test games.”

“ ... ”

“Dokja-ssi. Those people who are trapped right now, don’t you know who they really are? Look carefully. They are the scum who ignored us.”

My vision broadened and the screams of people could be heard. Looking closer, I did recognize them.

Many of the people trapped behind bars were those I knew from Mino Soft. There were people I didn’t know very well, people who didn’t know me or who didn’t care.

“It is over now. The finance team, the planning team, none of that matters. The best ones in the world right now are our QA team. Haha. Dokja-ssi, shouldn’t you know from testing bugs? This world is a game. A game with bugs. There are too many loopholes that I can take advantage of.”

Numerous messages from constellations were heard in my head.

The messages that wanted a more stimulating, more lascivious, more decadent story quietly overlapped with Deputy Yoon’s face.

Sometimes inferiority turned people into monsters.

“There is nothing to be afraid of. This world is a game that exists for us! Do you know how many coins my group earns a day with this?”

“I don’t know.”

“It is 5,000 coins a day. 5,000 coins... can you imagine? We don’t do the scenarios and

we get 5,000 coins. It is 5,000 coins just from making people fight and mate. It is the same as the planning team taking cash items. Don't you know what this means?"

I saw men approaching Han Sooyoung one by one. I slowly breathed out. So far, I showed courtesy to the colleague who once shared a rooftop with me by listening to his story.

I removed Deputy Yoon's hand from my shoulder and opened my mouth. "If you want to make coins, there is a better way."

"What?" Deputy Yoon turned red. "Did Dokja-ssi also find a bug? What is it?"

"The principle is the same as a coin farm. Stimulate the constellations."

"Oho, there is something more stimulating than this? Is that possible?"

"Yes, it is. Would you like me to let you know?"

"It would be good if you share the know-how!"

"The constellations really like... '

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

"...This."

There was the sound of the bars being cut apart. I swung my blade indiscriminately towards the wanderers surrounding the cage. I cut the Achilles tendon of those running away.

The knees of those who weren't prepared for resistance became twisted.

"Aaaaack! What is with this bastard?"

"My leg! My leg!"

I kept swinging my sword amidst the rising blood.

"Something like this."

I cut off the hands harassing a member of the human resources department then the arms of a man trying to take off Han Sooyoung's shirt.

"This is also good."

Blood splattered onto my cheek. I quietly wiped the blood and continued cutting at arms and legs. Then Deputy Yoon's voice was heard.

"W-What are you doing? What is this?"

"Thank you for the story."

I turned to look at Deputy Yoon.

"I created a situation that the constellations really like because of you."

With just two knives, none of the men who entered Han Sooyoung's cage could do anything against me.

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' is pleased with your judgment.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is snorting from the relentless punishment.]

[Many of the constellations who dislike the atrocities of some constellations are greatly satisfied with your judgment.]

[8,000 coins have been sponsored.]

Deputy Yoon turned white and flopped to the ground.

I laughed at him.

"Why bother creating something like the coin farm? It is easy to earn money."

"...Y-You son of a bitch!"

There was a large number of wanderers. In an instant, approximately 20 wanderers surrounded me.

It was an ambiguous number that might make me violate the principle of 'no killing' but I wasn't overly concerned. I just had to get out of here.



I retreated a bit while hugging Han Sooyoung's light body. Suddenly, her eyes flashed open and she asked, "...Why did you save me?"

"Were you awake? Then get up."

Han Sooyoung's voice was weak.

"If you save me, won't the constellations in your channel run away? Don't you know what the constellation's hate most?"

"There are some who like it."

[The constellation who has been waiting for a harem carefully puts both hands together.]

[The constellation who likes 'enemies turning into allies' is delighted.]

Han Sooyoung frowned.

"Now this is a cliché. Right? The moment that the woman is about to be raped, the hero will rescue her. Why are you acting like this despite saying that you dislike clichés?"

"You are mistaken about two things."

I started while lightly cutting a wanderer's legs.

"One, I'm not a hero. And two..."

[You have saved a life.]

[Your karma points have increased by one.]

[Current karma points: 14/100]

Karma points were gained when the system determined that a person had been 'saved.' In other words, if I left it alone, it was likely Han Sooyoung would've died.

"You're not a woman."

"...Put me down!"

I threw her to the ground without hesitation.

Han Sooyoung shouted, "You really put me down?"

"You fight as well."

"What?"

"We will fight together. Don't you like cliches?"

"No matter how much I like cliches, isn't it really cliché to fight on the same side as an enemy?"

She grumbled but we were quite well matched. I cut the legs of the approaching wanderers while Han Sooyoung followed me and stopped their breathing. We took their lives slowly and carefully until only a few survivors were left.

The terrified wanderers started to flee the coin farm.

"This is a complete profit."

I looked at the coins that I got from the wanderers while Han Sooyoung staggered with a smile.

[You have acquired 18,400 coins.]

Her contribution wasn't as high as mine but she would've got a decent amount of coins. I didn't get as much coins as I would've without Han Sooyoung present but I decided to think of it as a tip.

I looked in front to where Deputy Yoon was still sitting on the ground.

"Haha... psychopath. I thought you would be like this. I should've known when I heard the rumour... '

"Sick jerk. You are too talkative."

Han Sooyoung stabbed Deputy Yoon in the neck. Blood spurted from Deputy Yoon's neck and the light in his eyes died.

Another person who remembered Kim Dokja in reality disappeared.

Han Sooyoung saw me watching and grumbled. “...What is with your expression? Are you sorry that this jerk is dead?”

“No.”

“Then why did you keep listening to him?”

I was a bit surprised because I didn’t expect these words to emerge from Han Sooyoung’s mouth.

“You were just listening to this guy’s bullshit. Why? The constellations don’t like frustrating things.”

I listened blankly to her words before smiling.

What was this?

“You don’t seem to know but it is better to listen to this bullshit moderately in order to get more coins when they are killed. There is no refreshing feeling without being frustrated first.”

“No? Dokja... no, don’t the constellations prefer to kill right away? What do you know when you aren’t a writer?”

“I know very well. I am a reader.”

“This...!”

I ignored Han Sooyoung and rummaged through the items that had dropped. Most of it was garbage but there was a suit that I could wear.

[Old Gentleman’s Close Combat Suit]

It was a B-grade item and only slightly improved defense but it was better than not wearing it. I couldn’t wear Samyeongdang’s Mat forever... come to think of it, I should start item farming.

The fleeing wanderers seemed to be heading to their lair. It would be better to pursue and hit the wanderers.

If I remembered currently, Seocho had a few 'meteorite stones' to use in the fifth scenario. If it fell here then I had to obtain it.

Once I got a secondary battery...

[You have saved a life.]

[Your karma points have increased by one.]

[Current karma points: 25/100]

One or two people approached. They were all those who had been stuck behind bars.

Colour returned to the faces of some people who remembered my face.

I raised my hand before they could speak.

"I can't help you now. Take care of your own lives."

Faint despair filled their eyes but it wasn't a situation where I could help. It seemed cold but in the end, I had saved their lives.

"Pick up the items in moderation and then go to Chungmuro if you can afford it. There might be some people who can help you there."

Before I finished speaking, people started picking up the items that had fallen. Their eyes were blazing again as they hoped for survival.

Watching them, I understood why the dokkaebi brought me here.

"That is mine! Put it down!"

"I-I saw it first!"

The people who was victims were now looking at each other while holding weapons. They pointed the weapons at each other without hesitation.

This was a kingless world.

There was no one to control this world.

The dokkaebi was trying to show me this sight.

A world without a king was wild, without the laws and ethics that we had been guarding, showing how poor our belief in other humans was.

An unexpected voice stopped those who were about to wield their weapons.

“Do all of you want to die?”

# Chapter 74

## A Kingless World (5)

The frightened people looked at Han Sooyoung at the same time.

Han Sooyoung squatted down and spat out.

“Are you all idiots? Wake up. Think properly if you want to live. You don’t know when you will meet other bad people yet you want to cut down the number of people who can be colleagues?”

“T-That...”

“In this world, the underdogs have to be united. You want to fight over a few garbage items instead of combining forces?”

The people suddenly came to their senses and reddened.

The intermediate dokkaebi probably didn’t know that among the people he scattered, one of them was a web novelist.

“Don’t you have the necessary weapons and supplies? Can’t you survive? Don’t you know that the selfish ones are the first to fall? Do you think you can get stronger just by picking up a few more trash items?”

The complexions of the survivors darkened. Their bloodthirstiness slowly subsided.

“If you can’t become strong enough so that no one can touch you, make trusted colleagues. Isn’t that common sense?”

It was natural for a plagiarist to say such things.

In fact, her words were effective. People started to look awkwardly at one another. If someone opened their mouths at this moment, the people could unite. A few words caused their survival rate to rise sharply.

I stared at Han Sooyoung and opened my mouth. "But for you to say this..."

"Do you understand. Everyone should act correctly!" Han Sooyoung said quickly before turning and running away. Her stamina was low so she couldn't run far. "Pant, pant! Why are you chasing me?"

"You even plagiarized the words of the novel?"

{"If you can't become strong enough so that no one can touch you, make trusted colleagues."}

This was the advice that Yoo Jonghyuk gave to survivors in Ways of Survival. Han Sooyoung shouted, "How is it plagiarism? These lines are from my novel!"

"Then why are you running away?"

"...No reason! Why are you chasing me?"

She refused to admit that she plagiarized to the end. I grabbed her collar.

"I saved you so you should pay back the value."

"What value?"

I laughed at Han Sooyoung's nervous expression.

"If you have a spare battery, take it out. You must need it for your novel text."

Han Sooyoung's expression distorted.



I hadn't intended to take Han Sooyoung with me at first.

To be honest, Han Sooyoung was a bad person considering what she had done so far. However, her 'avatar' ability was quite useful and I had a few things to figure out. Most of all, she would be useful to clear the current sub scenario...

"I don't have a spare battery. I lost everything in Gwanghwamun."

“Then give me your novel.”

“No. Pay for it if you want to read it.”

“How am I supposed to pay when all the platforms are gone?”

I took her smartphone away from her. The upset Han Sooyoung clung to my shoulders and reached out an arm.

“What? Give it to me!”

The text version was on her desktop. She was relaxed.

[SSSSS-grade Infinite Regressor]

Let’s see...

I nervously clicked on the app file. I wondered if her text version would be invisible to everyone else like mine.

However, that wasn’t the case. A page in the middle of the book appeared, like I had been reading the novel.

{... Yoo Joonhyun quietly opened his status window. He wanted to check the Sage’s Eyes that he just received.

+

**[Character Information]**

**Name:** Yoo Joonhyun

**Age:** 27 years old.

**Star Contract:** ???

**Private Attribute:** Regressor (3rd turn) (Myth), Pro Gamer (Rare)

**Exclusive Skills:** Sage’s Eyes Lv. 1, Hand to Hand Combat Lv. 1, Weapons Training Lv. 1, Mental Barrier Lv. 1, Lie Detection Lv. 4... (Omitted)...

**Stigma:** [Regression Lv. 3]

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 24, Strength Lv. 24, Agility Lv. 25, Magic Power Lv. 23.

+

Yoo Joonhyun laughed as he confirmed his status window.



“Huhu, I finally got Sage’s Eyes. I am lucky this regression.”}

I read up to there and looked at the frozen Han Sooyoung.

“Don’t you have a conscience?”

“...What?”

“Didn’t you copy the personal information from Ways of Survival? As a writer, shouldn’t you change the composition?”

Han Sooyoung hesitated for a moment before muttering, “Ways of Survival is a sponsor and mine is a star contract. It is completely different. And there is no comprehensive evaluation in my novel!”

“...Even so. Isn’t the name of the protagonist too much? It is like Joonhyun was a typo. Shouldn’t you change it more? The author of Ways of Survival would cry if he saw this.”

Han Sooyoung’s face turned red and she screamed, “It is just... no, so what? What are you curious about?”

“How many chapters of the original did you read?”

“99... hey! Can’t you give that back to me?”

She read up to chapter 99?

What would the author think if he knew that the person who read Ways of Survival the most after me was a plagiarist?

Well, he was the one pleased by the views raised during the plagiarism controversy so he might say, “Thank you for reading up to chapter 99. You are a true reader.”

I sighed and asked, “Chapter 99, then do you know the location of the meteorite in the fifth scenario?

Didn’t it appear in your novel?”

“There is no such thing as a meteorite in my novel!” It was surprising. I thought she would’ve copied this as well. “I have a sealing stone!”

As expected.

“Then I am going to get the sealing stone, so be prepared.”

“You are going to get the meteorite?”

“Let’s unify the terms. Anyway, you know that I saved you?”

“I didn’t ask you...”

The meteorite containing the fire dragon was found by Han Sooyoung. I almost died because of this woman. That reminded me, I put the carcass of the fire dragon on the Exchange. Had it been sold yet?

I ignored Han Sooyoung for a bit and called out to Bihyung.

‘Bihyung.’

There was no answer.

The existing scenarios completely disappeared in an unexpected way. Perhaps the dokkaebis of the Seoul Dome were in a meeting right now.

They might be saying something like, “This edition is ruined anyway so sell a lot of coin products...”

The next moment, the ‘Exchange’ window and ‘Dokkaebi Bag’ window opened at the same time.

This brat, he didn’t have time to send a message?

[Many constellations are dissatisfied with the sudden advertisements.]

Furthermore, he didn’t forget to play the advertisements. I opened up the sales history on the Exchange first.

[The item ‘Fire Dragon’s Scales’ has been sold for 8,000 coins.]

[The item ‘Fire Dragon’s Bones’ has been sold for 5,000 coins.]

Unexpectedly, there was someone who bought these expensive items.

The items that weren't meant for sale were also sold.

[The item 'Fire Dragon's Bones' has been sold for 22,222 coins.]

...The items that I had stored on the Exchange were sold. Someone must be desperate for the fire dragon's bones. If I knew this, I would've set the price as 99,999.

The incarnations that possessed such power at present were Anna Croft, Ranveer Khan of India and China's Feihu... in any case, that person was ignorant.

I opened the Dokkaebi Bag and bought some items that I needed. Then Han Sooyoung spoke to me in a timely manner.

"Why do you want me to go with you? You can go alone."

"It is like what you just said. The most important thing for survival is to obtain reliable colleagues."

Han Sooyoung looked at me suspiciously.

"Hrmm..."

I pulled out an item I just bought.

"Now, swear here."

[The item Temporary Pledge has been used.]

+

[Temporary Pledge]

1. Kim Dokja (Gap) will sign a contract with Han Sooyoung (Eul) until the sub scenario currently in progress is over.
2. Kim Dokja (Gap) and Han Sooyoung (Eul) will not harm each other until the sub scenario currently in progress is over.
3. During the contract period, Kim Dokja (Gap) and Han Sooyoung (Eul) will sleep alternately in prepared for the 'sleeping penalty.'
- .....
6. During the contract period, the guidelines for the party will prevail over Kim Dokja's (Gap) opinions.
7. During the contract period, Han Sooyoung (Eul) will cooperate with Kim Dokja

(Gap) to clear the scenarios. She will follow Kim Dokja's orders as long as her life isn't in danger.

8. During the contract period, Kim Dokja (Gap) will protect Han Sooyoung (Eul).

9. This contract will expire at the end of the sub scenario. The body will be destroyed if the contract is violated.

+

Temporary Pledge. It didn't have the effect of a sponsor contract but it was effective for short-term contracts.

Han Sooyoung looked at me with surprised eyes.

"Do you think I will sign this?"

"Then don't."

"...Why should I sign it? I have never done it before."

"Good. The first experience is important."

Han Sooyoung gritted her teeth. Even so, I knew she would accept. There was no other choice for a person with exhausted magic power. It was suicide to wander alone in Seocho-gu and she needed someone to protect her for a bit.

"...Okay. I accept. But I have one condition."

"What is it?"

"We will share information with each other. How about it? I have a lot to ask you. You should answer honestly. I have Lie Detection."

She already got something that I couldn't obtain?

[The character 'Han Sooyoung' has used 'Lie Detection Lv. 1'.]

...It was real.

Han Sooyoung got to the point. "What is your attribute?"

"I don't know."

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that your words are true.]

Han Sooyoung made a stupid expression and raised a hand to her temple.

“...Is this broken?”

“No, it is normal. Then ask me the next question quickly. I will only answer three. For your reference, you have already used one.”

“No, what do you mean that you don’t know your attribute?”

“I really don’t know. Now, what is the next question?”

Han Sooyoung’s eyes narrowed and she reluctantly continued to ask questions. “Why did you give up the Absolute Throne?”

I figured that this question would emerge.

“My plan was ruined because of you. If it wasn’t for you... do you know how hard I prepared those apostles only for them to be eliminated? If I was sitting on the throne, I would’ve been prepared for the next scenario by now...”

“If you sat on the throne, Seoul would’ve perished.”

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that your words are true.]

Han Sooyoung frowned. “Why does the skill keep breaking?”

“It isn’t broken. We would’ve been ruined if anyone, not just you or me, sat on the throne.”

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that your words are true.]

Han Sooyoung’s eyes widened.

“How do you know? Where did you get off? Why do you know this when I don’t?”

“I’m not someone who got off.”

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that your words are true.]

Han Sooyoung was extremely shocked and managed to squeeze out a question after a moment.

“You... how far did you read in Ways of Survival?”

“Your three questions are over.”

“This is the most important question!” Han Sooyoung’s chin trembled. “No way... right? You... there can’t be such a crazy guy... yes, it is unlikely...”

*Da da da da!*

Then something that sounded like horse hooves were hard in the distance.

I told the muttering Han Sooyoung to be silent and we quickly fled to the rear of a nearby building. Something was approaching.

It was in the form of a human...? I used Character List on the people rushing towards me in the cloud of dust.

[The information of this person can’t be read in ‘Character List.’]

[This person isn’t registered in ‘Character List.’]

Looking closely, I could see that all the people running had fur sprouting from their whole body.

Their faces were human but their bodies were monster-like and twice as big as a human. They seemed like bipedal wolves.

Looking closely, one monster in the lead was holding a man by the neck. It was the biggest of the monsters.

*Grrr...* “Where is he?”

“T-This area! The coin farm...”

There was a sound and the man’s head was blown away. He was one of the wanderers who had been in front of Mino Soft. The monsters rushed eagerly and started eating the man’s body.

I think I knew what these monsters were.

Han Sooyoung realized something and muttered, "...The outside species?"

Wanderers had their own ways of survival. There were those who still existed as humans and made coin farms, while others gave up on being human and walked the path of a new species.

The outside species had limits but because they gave up on their humanity, they could grow faster than others in the beginning to mid part of the story.

Maybe these guys were the werewolves...

"...They gained the power of the meteorite."

Right now, it was only the fifth scenario. At the current time, the only way people could evolve into werewolves was by using the power of the meteorite. The wanderers had already got their hands on the meteorite that fell in Seochu-gu.

Han Sooyoung opened her mouth. "I know him. That bastard, he is someone who stopped reading."

"...How do you know?"

"I can see it. It is the privilege as the last person who got off the novel."

"Privilege?"

"I can read the information and attributes of those who stopped reading." She spoke in a slightly boasting tone.

Speaking of which, I remembered a story that I heard from Jung Minseob.

Shortly after the scenarios began, the First Apostle came to them. This would be explained if Han Sooyoung had the ability to find those who stopped reading. Then she used her Avatar ability to appear before them.

Han Sooyoung kept speaking.

"That's why I doubted your identity. A guy who can't be read by my skill..."

Han Sooyoung stared at me before looking back at the outside species.

“At that time, there were a few people who refused my offer. That wanderer was one of them. I thought it wasn’t a big deal since most of them would die early...”

“Who is that guy?”

“He is Song Minwoo.”

Song Minwoo? It definitely wasn’t the name of a character. Yet I had heard the name somewhere...

[The 6th grade outside species ‘Werewolf Song Minwoo’ is searching the surroundings.]

I could see the face of the person in the distance. Ah... perhaps.

A recent memory came to mind. It was the dream I had a few hours ago. I remembered my days in high school and the gangsters who bullied me. Many years had passed but his facial expression seemed to fit. No matter how much time passed, I couldn’t forget that name on the name badge.

Song Minwoo... it must be him. But that bastard was someone ‘who got off?’ That gangster read a novel?

“Where did he get off?”

“That guy... he was a bit strange. He is a bit different from the usual readers.”

“What is it?”

Han Sooyoung worried for a moment before saying,

“In my eyes, he... ‘partially got off at 173.’”

At this moment, Song Minwoo sniffed and he turned his head this way. His yellow eyes seemed to be saying, ‘I found you.’

He fell to the ground on all fours and started rushing to this side.



# Chapter 75

## A Kingless World (5)

By the time I realized, Song Minwoo was immediately in front of me. It was a tremendous speed. His agility must be at least above level 40 in order to achieve this speed.

“You?” He asked in a tearful voice. This guy had already finished his transition to an outside species.

[The 6th grade outside species, Song Minwoo has triggered ‘A Predator’s Threat Lv. 5!']

[The character ‘Han Sooyoung’ has used ‘Mental Barrier Lv. 3’.]

[The character ‘Han Sooyoung’ has alleviated some of the effects of A Predator’s Threat.]

In a moment, his hand shot out and grabbed Han Sooyoung’s throat.

“Keok...”

Han Sooyoung might not be in a perfect physical condition but it was too much for her to be suppressed at once.

The 6th grade outside species. It was the worst enemy to deal with right now.

It was different compared to the 5th grade fire dragon. At that time, my ice attribute overwhelmed the fire attribute and I could take advantage of the dull movements of the big monster.

But now...

Song Minwoo stared at me. “Did you break my coin farm?”

The tone was certain despite it being a question. Han Sooyoung screamed the moment she saw Song Minwoo’s white fangs. “Shit, kill him quickly!”

I used Blade of Faith while Han Sooyoung used Avatar. At almost the same time, Song Minwoo's powerful kick arrived. The just created Avatar's head burst while I went flying through the air.

[The 6th grade outside species, Song Minwoo has triggered 'Accelerate Lv. 5!']

Song Minwoo's fist followed at a speed that was almost invisible. Head, shoulders, belly. The onslaught poured out towards those areas. Air burst out from me.

Han Sooyoung's voice cried out, "Kim Dokja!"

...No, even if this was an outside species, how could he be so strong? It was too late to avoid the blow. I hurriedly raised my overall stats.

[16,000 coins have been invested in physique.]

[Physique Lv. 24 -> Physique Lv. 50]

[A giant-like physical fitness fills your body.]

The pain quickly dwindled and it reached the point where I could tolerate it. But the situation wasn't over.

"Kim Dokja? Where did I hear that name?" I heard Song Minwoo mumbling.

I could see this face through my defenses and that was the problem. This guy wasn't strong. The problem was me.

[The effect of A Predator's Threat has reduced your will to fight.]

[A Predator's Threat has slowed down your movements.]

It was ridiculous. I overcame the threat of the 5th grade fire dragon only to be affected by this guy?

It was impossible. I had the Fourth Wall...

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is shaking.]

This situation had happened once before.

It happened when I fought Yoo Jonghyuk in the Theatre Dungeon and when I was immersed in Yoo Jonghyuk's first person view... but now Yoo Jonghyuk wasn't here. So

why?

Song Minwoo roared and raised his claws. "...Kinda familiar. Do I know you?"

*–Hey, Kim Dokja. What is this?*

A familiar voice overlapped with the same voice.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is shaking.]

I grabbed his wrist and answered, "I don't know."

"Really? I think I remember."

*–Stop reading and go and get me some bread. Yes?*

[The 6th grade outside species, Song Minwoo has triggered 'Memory Enhancement Lv. 3!']

"I know you."

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is shaking.]

...Dammit. I see. Now I knew what the Fourth Wall skill was.

There was a smile on Song Minwoo's face. "Strange. How does a geek like you survive up to this point? You were reading a novel every day."

"..."

"Haha, you are that person. Aren't you the guy who was beaten up by me while reading a novel in your spare time? Don't you remember?"

I remembered. Of course I remembered. A late rage filled my head.

"You are Song Minwoo. You should remember the face of your old school friend right? It is good. I was wondering if you were still alive."

When I was 17, I used to think that if I had the strength, I would tear apart this guy in front of me.

Song Minwoo kept talking. “The novel you were reading at that time. Where can I see it?”

The moment I heard this, a scene came to my mind. I had been sitting in my seat and scrolling through the novel when he hit me.

...Perhaps?

*–This otaku, you are reading this? Is this fun? It is laughable.*

Of course, the novel I was reading at that time...

Song Minwoo’s fist struck my abdomen and my body flew through the air. The moment I slammed into the outer wall of a building, Han Sooyoung’s avatars attacked Song Minwoo. The exterior wall of the destroyed building fell on me.

[The exclusive skill, ‘Fourth Wall’ is shaking.]

The Fourth Wall. It was an exclusive skill that I had from the beginning. I still didn’t know all the functions of this skill but I was confident of at least one thing.

This skill made me recognize this world as a ‘novel.’

In fact, I often felt strange. I made judgments and did actions that weren’t possible in reality. It was like I was calmly watching this world from the outside.

It was due to the Fourth Wall.

“Shit... What are you doing?”

An angry voice was heard. As I cleared away the pile of stones, the angry Han Sooyoung blocked my way.

Her dozens of avatars were dealing with Song Minwoo and the werewolves in the corridors of the building. Blood was flowing from Han Sooyoung’s nose and her blood vessels popped out as she struggled.

It was because Han Sooyoung was squeezing out every drop of her already low magic power to exert this strength.

“I believed in you but what are you doing now?”

I slowly raised myself while feeling a sharp pain in my bones. This was truly real pain. I had forgotten since the Fourth Wall acted as a cushion for this pain.

[Many constellations are confused by the unexpected development.]

I endured the pain and stood up, shaking off the dust. “This is an awakening event.”

“...What?”

“Where is the fun in easily winning all the time? Sometimes I should go through adversity.

“Oh, is that why you are so beaten up?”

“I was just thinking for a while.”

[Many constellations are relieved.]

The Fourth Wall was a skill that made reality like a novel. Then it was obvious why the wall was shaking. It was because I currently regarded Song Minwoo as ‘reality.’ He was the asshole who beat me up and made my teen years a tragedy.

“...Do you know that bastard?” She was a writer and a really quick female. I stared at her and the hesitating Han Sooyoung hurriedly added. “I’m sorry. I didn’t want to hear it but the words he said to you...”

I replied honestly to the person who had Lie Detection. “Yes, I know him.”

“I can roughly guess...”

“That bastard. He is obviously a trauma.”

“...Where is the obvious trauma? A trauma is serious.”

Han Sooyoung stated as she spat out blood.

“Then what is the problem? Han Sooyoung, you can help me awaken. If you tell me a few words from Ways of Survival, won’t I awaken?”

“Do you think I’m Lee Hyunsung?”

In the end, I had to solve this problem myself. I would have a hard time going forward if the Fourth Wall shook every time I met a person who stimulated my traumas.

Above all, I was 28 years old right now. I wasn’t a 17 year old who was flustered by a bully.

[A constellation who likes revenge has revealed his own modifier.]

[The constellation ‘One who Overcomes the Late Trials’ is cheering for you.]

[Some constellations are in agreement.]

[A bounty scenario has occurred!]

+

[Bounty Scenario – Overcoming Trauma]

**Category:** Sub

**Difficulty:** C

**Clear Conditions:** Some constellations, such as One who Overcomes the Late Trials has commissioned a bounty scenario for you. Overcome your trauma within the time limit and get rid of the specter of the past.

**Time Limit:** 1 hour

**Compensation:** ???

**Failure:** The contempt of One who Overcomes the Late Trials.

+

One who Overcomes the Late Trials was a constellation I had seen in Ways of Survival.

As far as I knew, this guy was a constellation of a different world... well, more of these constellations would start emerging in the fifth scenario.

In any case, this was a blessing in disguise. I threw Samyeongdang’s Straw Mat to Han Sooyoung.

“Wipe up your nosebleed and stay back.”

“What?”

“It is enough.”

I jumped over Han Sooyoung’s avatars towards the group of werewolves.

[6,000 coins have been invested in agility.]  
[Agility Lv. 30 -> Agility Lv. 40]  
[An amazing wind lies in your body.]  
[15,500 coins have been invested in strength.]  
[Strength Lv. 25 -> Strength Lv. 50]  
[Your muscles are squirming like they are monsters.]

I should've done this sooner. I had been too wary since being hit by the 'possibilities storm' not long ago.

[The special option of Unbroken Faith is activated.]  
[The ether property is converted to 'divine'.]

There was no reason for me to lose this fight. I just had a momentary lapse in judgment from the Fourth Wall shaking. If I thought about it, I had the means to overpower these guys. In fact, I had many methods.

The werewolves collapsed before my blade. Werewolves had the dark attribute, making them vulnerable to the divine attribute.

Moreover, I didn't need to worry about the 'no killing' penalty with them. As I said, they were an outside species, not human. They weren't my kind any more.

I found Song Minwoo's face among the werewolves. His eyes slowly grew larger while Han Sooyoung's voice was heard behind me.

"Hey! Is it okay?"

I didn't answer. In fact, this situation was almost exactly the same.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is shaking!]

However, it would turn out differently from earlier.

"It's okay. My awakening event is over."

I ran straight towards Song Minwoo.

*Grrrrr!*

A few thoughts passed through my head. If I used Ganpyeongui and called the 'Hunter of the Hexagram', this game would end easily. But I wouldn't overcome my trauma by fighting like that.

This time, I had to fight with my own capabilities.

[The 6th grade outside species, Song Minwoo has triggered 'Accelerate Lv. 5!']

Song Minwoo's body moved at great speed after Acceleration was triggered. He already had level 40 agility and now his speed was increased with the effect of Acceleration Lv. 5.

I didn't have any footwork skills so I was forced to use a shortcut.

[7,000 coins have been invested in agility.]

[Agility Lv. 40 -> Agility Lv. 50]

[An amazing storm lies in your body.]

If I didn't have skills, I could use stats. I lightly dodged the flying claws and raised my blade.

"Kuaaaak!"

His arm flew through the air and I cut off his other arm. The confused Song Minwoo lost his balance. I didn't miss this gao and cut off his legs.

Song Minwoo roared as his limbs were severed in an instant. Along with the roar, his severed limbs were growing back.

This was the privilege of a werewolf's 'Physical Regeneration'. However, normally the speed was lower... this bastard, did he receive a 'protection'?

Yes... this was better.

[The constellation 'One who Overcomes the Late Trials' is focused on your actions.]

The goal of the bounty scenario was to overcome the trauma. The constellation wouldn't be satisfied with an easy kill. I turned off the blade and used my fists instead.

[8,000 coins have been invested in strength.]



[Strength Lv. 50 -> Strength Lv. 60]

[Your power has started to attract the attention of the giants.]

[Your total stats have almost reached the limit of this scenario.]

I grabbed Song Minwoo's neck.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is shaking.]

Whenever I looked at this guy's face, I felt the '17 year old Kim Dokja' inside me shrink back.

Poor thing. From now on, I would get revenge for 'him.'

"Minwoo, I didn't greet you properly earlier."

"What...?"

"It is nice to see you."

I hit him in the stomach.

"Kuheeok!"

"By the way, I was in pain a lot back then."

The 17 year old Kim Dokja was watching me in my memories. Feel free to watch.

"If you have a conscience, shouldn't you apologize first?"

I held him with one hand and continued to punch. The chest, the stomach and the face.

"What is wrong with reading a novel? Eh? Did I harm you?" On behalf of the 17 year old Kim Dokja, I hit him again and again. "Bastard, I even used some money to buy the books."

His teeth were broken, his chest muscles damaged and his bones shattered. The nearby werewolves growled at the assault but couldn't come close. I was giving out a Predator's Threat despite not using any skill.

Real fear came from a strength that was on a different dimension. 10 minutes passed

before Song Minwoo started begging.

*Grrr!* “S-Sorry, I’m sorry...!”

“Really? You’re sorry?”

“Yes! I’m really really sorry! I-I was young at the time...”

Of course he was. I knew. That degree of malice was understandable in his immature days. But.

“You must be mistaken... I wasn’t trying to get an apology.” This was something that couldn’t be understood or forgiven. “In the first place, I’m not the one you should apologize to.”

“What does that...”

“First, I will hit you until all my trauma has disappeared.

I watched the collapsed Song Minwoo and thought of my teen years. I was helpless, weak and only knew novels.

In fact, Han Sooyoung was right. There was no obvious trauma in this world.

All trauma was severe for the person involved so I didn’t think these actions would completely eliminate my trauma.

I would often have nightmares as the 17 year old Kim Dokja repeated the tragedy of that time.

Still, this might be a bit comforting. Just like when I read *Ways of Survival* back then.

The 28 year old Kim Dokja might be able to help the 17 year old Kim Dokja escape from the nightmare for a short time.

“Keok! Cough! S-Stop... stop...”

Just like ‘Yoo Jonghyuk’ was to me in those days.

“Keoook...”

How long did I hit him? Finally, there was a moment when I looked at Song Minwoo's face and felt nothing.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall's' shaking has subsided.]

[You have met the conditions to clear the bounty scenario!]

# Chapter 76

## The Fifth Scenario (1)

Song Minwoo's blood dripped onto the ground.

The feeling of my blood-soaked fist was dull. Song Minwoo was bleeding but he didn't open his eyes or talk. The shattered flesh seemed to have given up on restoration.

Han Sooyoung muttered, "A scary guy... you killed a werewolf with bare hands?"

The other werewolves had already run away or were taken care of by Han Sooyoung. I looked down at Song Minwoo and said,

"He hasn't died yet."

Now the Fourth Wall didn't shake when I looked at him. I didn't know if the trauma was resolved but I could resist it more than in the past.

[The constellation 'One who Overcomes the Late Trials' sends encouragement to you.]  
[The constellation 'One who Overcomes the Late Trials' wants to give you his own stigma.]

Giving me a stigma? Really? The bounty scenario wasn't a single constellation request so it was surprising to give a stigma as a reward.

Of course, I appreciated it.

[The stigma Self-rationalization has been acquired.]  
[The constellation 'One who Overcomes the Late Trials' smiles with satisfaction at you who has succeeded his stigma.]  
[You will now have a defense mechanism that won't be bothered by any trauma.]

Thanks... I stared absentmindedly for a bit.

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is grabbing his belly and laughing.]

Self-rationalization? What did this mean? Are you kidding me?

Han Sooyoung asked, “Hey, aren’t you going to kill him?”

“Eh?”

“I’m talking about that.”

I looked down at Song Minwoo in my hands. Should I kill him? There was no burden since he was an outside species.

[The backer of Song Minwoo is looking at you.]

The constellations of Bihyung’s channel would like it if I killed him.

[Many constellations desire your revenge.]

I looked at Song Mingwoo for a while before putting him down.

“Let’s go.”

“What? Really?”

“Yes.”

[Some constellations are disappointed with your hypocrisy.]

[Many constellations are questioning your judgment.]

[The constellation Secretive Plotter is watching your judgment.]

“You really won’t kill him? Won’t this bastard have coins?”

“Yes.”

“Then can I kill him?”

“Go ahead. But won’t you regret it?”

“Regret?”

I shrugged and walked towards her.

To be exact, it was in the direction that the werewolf group had run away. Perhaps their origin would be at the end of this direction. If my guess was right, the meteorite was what helped transform them into werewolves. The meteorites must be collected to prepare for the disaster scenario.

Han Sooyoung looked after me with a suspicious expression.

All of a sudden, the sound of footsteps died up and headed in another direction. It was in the exact direction of Song Minwoo.

Her avatar...

Yes. I thought Han Sooyoung would do this. I let her do what she want. In return, she would turn a blind eye to my hypocrisy.

Then after a while.

“Shit! What is this?”

Han Sooyoung gave a terrible scream and shook. I could tell the messages that were appearing in her head. Perhaps they would be messages like this:

[The 6th grade outside species ‘Song Minwoo’ has been killed and the demon king ‘Andras’ has noticed the murderer’s presence.

[The demon king Andras will remember the one who dealt the final blow.]

[The demon king Andras will search for the one who dealt the final blow.]

[Final Blow: Han Sooyoung]

Han Sooyoung looked at me with a pale face and I laughed.

“I told you that you would regret it.”

Song Minwoo was a member of the 72nd demon king, Andras’ household.

◇ ◇ ◇

The 72nd demon king.

The constellations weren’t the only strong ones among the Star Stream.

There were some strong people who refused to be subscribes to the heavens and travelled around planets. One of these superpowers was the 'demon kings.'

"You are a really bad jerk."

The demon kings sought their own 'households', just like the constellations chose incarnations. Corrupted incarnations could choose to join the household of a demon king.

The werewolf was one of his symbols and was located at the bottom of the 72nd demon king Andras' caste.

It was due to Andras' blessing that Song Minwoo had the Physical Regeneration ability.

Han Sooyoung stuttered out, "H-How can I..."

"Don't worry. Some people I know were cursed by a demon king like you but they didn't die right away."

"Why are you saying it now?"

Come to think of it, Han Myungoh who was cursed by the demon king, Asmodeus... I didn't know what happened to him. Was he still alive?

"I think it is good. Andras isn't a very high ranking demon king. If you are enemies with a demon king, you will get the favour of the absolute good constellations and get more donations. It is a good thing."

"Will the archangels care? Besides, I don't get along with sponsors and angels!"

Why? Was it also a demon king? I couldn't help thinking so when I suddenly closed my mouth.

...What did she just say?

"You don't get along with sponsors and angels?"

Han Sooyoung noticed my gaze and cursed.

"Damn, my damn mouth..."

“Do you not have a sponsor?”

It wasn't impossible. I also had no sponsor. In fact, in the first scenario, many of the survivors wouldn't get sponsors. To be precise, they didn't have any choices.

However, it was unexpected that a strong person like Han Sooyoung had no sponsor.

“I didn't choose one. Isn't it strange to choose from the beginning? I can only pick once.”

“Well, that's right.”

If the Sponsor Selection could be postponed, it was better to postpone it.

There were many good constellations and depended on how the person acted in a scenario, they could literally go from a 'turd to a Mercedes.'

The Sponsor Selection occurred once after the first scenario and were regularly implemented before the 'disaster scenarios' occurred.

The fifth scenario was a 'disaster scenario' so Han Sooyoung would be able to participate in the upcoming second round of the Sponsor Selection.

I raised my hand and asked, “Who will you choose? Is there a constellation you are thinking about?”

Han Sooyoung made a confident expression at my words. “Won't you be surprised when you find out? They are already interested in me.”

“Who is it?”

Was it perhaps the Great Sage the Equal of Heaven?

“Have you heard of the Abyssal Black Flame Dragon?”

...The black flame dragon?

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' is looking at your reaction.]

I hesitated for a moment before replying, “Ah, yes. He is a good sponsor.”



The Abyssal Black Flame Dragon was the sponsor of the Delusional Demon Kim Namwoon in the original novel. The Delusional Demon was one of the best fights along with the Steel Sword, so it wasn't a bad choice.

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' is looking at you with a complicated gaze.]

This guy wasn't interested in me anymore.

Han Sooyoung's eyebrows twitched at my nonchalant tone. "What is with this sour expression? Who is your sponsor?"

"No, it is nothing. I was just feeling envious."

"Really?"

"Really."

[The character 'Han Sooyoung' has used 'Lie Detection Lv. 1'.]

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that the statement is false]

"Is this real?"

I didn't care about the Abyssal Black Flame Dragon. I just wanted her to get a sponsor. Han Sooyoung and this thug matched very well.

[The constellation who likes harems is cheering on you and Han Sooyoung.]

[500 coins have been sponsored.]

Han Sooyoung's expression distorted like she heard the same message as me.

"What is this again...?"

Unfortunately, the wish of the harem constellation wouldn't come true. Han Sooyoung and I would only be together for the next 10 days.

There was a moment of cooperation but it didn't change that she was a threatening enemy.

"It looks like we've arrived."

After a while, we reached the place that was probably the base of the werewolves.

It was near a broadcasting station. There was a bloody smell coming from the narrow forest of buildings. I heard the cries of the werewolves and people in the distance, like a battle was going on. Han Sooyoung said, "It seems that we are a bit late. Is there a preceding visitor?"

I didn't see any werewolves moving around as guards. Once we entered a bit further, a coin farmer that was bigger than Director Yoon's one was installed.

The coin farms were the exclusive property of the destroyed world. I was tired of facing these sights all the time.

It seemed like the coin harvest was over because there were no surviving people behind bars.

Han Sooyoung was moving ahead when she suddenly grabbed her nose.

"Yuck, what is this?"

As we headed through the imprisonment area to the residence of the werewolves, a more horrifying sight awaited us. Severed human thighs were hanging from rubber bands. It was like pork in a butcher's shop, making the purpose obvious.

[The exclusive skill 'Fourth Wall' has offset your emotional trauma.]

I read these scenes in the text but this was my first time actually seeing them. There was a fixed way for humans to evolve into an outside species.

Cannibalism In other words, to eat their own people.

Han Sooyoung cursed, "You fucking scum..."

Most outside species evolved accidentally. Those who couldn't clear the 'find food' sub scenario usually walked this path. Once they ate a person, they couldn't stop. Those who changed species would no longer feel guilty about killing humans.

I stated, "You look upset when you see this."

"Of course. Who wouldn't be upset?"

“The other prophets said you want to use your information to control the world.”

“Who said that?” Han Sooyoung sneered and added, “It is just as absurd as you calling me a plagiarist.”

“ ... ”

“World domination? It would be good. But my first goal is to prevent the destruction. Why else did I collect the apostles?”

“The apostles were all trash.”

“They were originally trash? Is that my fault?”

*Tang! Tang! Tang! Tang!*

We reflexively held our breaths. There was a loud sound from in front of us. I would hear the sound of flesh exploding.

*Tatang!*

No matter how I thought about it, this was the sound of gunshots. Wasn't the army already wiped out?

We ran towards the building towards the gunshots. Even if the army was still intact, it was ridiculous to deal with a werewolf with guns. But the sight in front of me changed the story.

Bodies of werewolves were piled up in front of me like a mountain. All of the bodies had bullet wounds. Han Sooyoung and I talked almost simultaneously.

“Attribute bullets.”

“A bullet with the divine attribute?”

I saw some people pointing guns in the distance. They were armed with modern rifles and unusually, they were all wearing prison uniforms.

Han Sooyoung nervously grabbed my collar. “Hey, do you remember me telling you that there was someone like you in Sondaemun Prison?”

“Yes.”

“They are her forces.”

Han Sooyoung was pointing to a woman wearing a mask. It would be hard to know the sex if it wasn't for the long hair hanging down, covering most of the body including the face.

“She is the leader. It is obvious that she is a reader but I don't have any information on her.”

I see. They were from Seodaemun Prison... Then why wasn't this force visible during the struggle for the throne?

Han Sooyoung opened her mouth while looking at the mountain of werewolf corpses.

“They are also wanderers. They are quite powerful wanderers... the most powerful wanderers I know.”

A woman with a gun headed straight to this side. It wasn't the leader that Han Sooyoung pointed out.

I pulled out Unbroken Faith while Han Sooyoung prepared Avatar. The gun of the woman approaching us moved.

She leaned back and her muzzled headed to one of the mountain of werewolf corpses.

*Dududududu!*

The dead bullets collapsed from the bullets. Then something hidden under the bodies were revealed.

“This is?”

There was a glowing stone that was 2m in length and height. It was one of the meteorites I needed to prevent the 'disaster.'

The yellow meteorite was here. This meteorite was also the source of the werewolves' strength.

The woman gazed at the meteorite before slowly turning to me.

“Are you Kim Dokja?”

# Chapter 77

## The Fifth Scenario (2)

Looking closely, the woman seemed quite old.

Based on the wrinkles, she wasn't in her 40s but she was at least in her mid to late 30s.

She knew me? How?

I was a bit embarrassed but I maintained my composure as I looked at the woman.

"You must be mistaken. My name is Yoo Jonghyuk. Kim Dokja is the name of the guy I hate the most."

"...Yoo Jonghyuk?"

"Yes. So tell your leader not to talk nonsense. Just tell her, even if you're not sure what I mean."

I looked to the side and saw Han Sooyoung watching me with an absurd expression. I winked at her. If it was Han Sooyoung, she would know what to do from now on. The woman opened her mouth.

"I already know that you are Kim Dokja. Stop the unnecessary lies."

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that the statement is true.]

Han Sooyoung nodded towards me. This woman came because she knew for certain who I was.

"The king said that she will entrust this meteorite to you."

It was unexpected. She knew me and now she was giving me the meteorite...

"Who are you?"

“We are the people of the Wanderer King.”

“That woman over there is your king?”

The woman nodded. I looked at the tall masked woman in the distance. Looking closely, I felt a sense of déjà vu. But there was something strange.

“King... You don’t seem to have a flag?”

“The king doesn’t dwell on such things.”

...What was with this answer? The woman continued speaking. “The king said that we will take care of the disaster in the north. But she will leave the other four disasters to you.”

Before I could ask anything, the woman turned and left like her words were over.

Han Sooyoung shouted, “Hey! What are you suddenly saying? Shouldn’t you explain it before you go?”

Despite the shouts, the woman kept walking away without turning back. Han Sooyoung looked at me and asked, “What is this... do you know that woman?”

“How can that be?”

I quietly activated Character List.

[This person isn’t registered in ‘Character List.’]

[You can check the information of the person by updating Character List. Do you want to update it?]

It seemed that the update cycle was back. I nodded.

[The update has been completed.]

[Some people will be added to the dictionary.]

Then a window popped up.

+

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Cho Youngran

**Age:** 37 years old.

**Constellation Support:** First Sorcerer of Joseon

**Private Attribute:** Escaped Prisoner (General), Officer of Justice (Rare)

**Exclusive Skills:** Prison Escape Lv. 3, Patience Lv. 6, Execution Time Lv. 3, Shooting Lv. 4...

**Stigma:** Transformation Occult Art Lv. 2

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 30, Strength Lv. 34, Agility Lv. 36, Magic Power Lv. 28.

**Overall Evaluation:** The current comprehensive evaluation is currently in progress.

\* 'Starter Pack' is currently applied.

\* A growth package is currently applied.

+

Look at this, the First Sorcerer of Joseon?

[The constellation 'First Sorcerer of Joseon' is looking at you with wary eyes.]

I didn't think there would already be a woman with Jeon Woochi as a sponsor.

*(Jeon Woochi was a taoist sorcerer during the Joseon Dynasty.)*

In addition, she had the fairly good attribute of Officer of Justice, although it was less than the 'judge.'

If the subordinate was this good, what was the king like? I immediately looked at the tall woman.

[The information of this person can't be read in 'Character List.']

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

The moment I met the gaze of the woman in the mask, a stinging pain flashed through my head.

I reflexively looked away from the woman. My heart beat quickly.

The Fourth Wall instinctively shook.

The woman caused an even greater shaking than Song Minwoo. Despite having Self-



rationalization, I didn't want to take the risk because I wasn't sure of the stigma's performance.

Han Sooyoung asked me anxiously, "Hey, what is it?"

"...Never mind."

The Fourth Wall responded to people who had an important influence on me in real life.

In other words, that woman was someone I knew. But there was only one person in this world who gave me a bigger trauma than Song Minwoo.

I see... As expected, she survived. However, I didn't expect her to be in Seoul.

It was why she was able to make a large force and why they were wearing prison uniforms. It was convincing if it was that person.

The wanderers soon began to move.

They aligned themselves and headed back the way they came. It was a march with no hesitation. A loyalty could be felt from the group.

The leader moved at the forefront of the group.

A crown like the Tyrant King, a woman who was different from the King of Beauty.

I looked at the ruins that they moved through. There were the broken coin farms and the survivors they spared. They had placed blankets and necessities beside the survivors. The survivors watched the leaving wanderers with awe-filled eyes.

I had forgotten.

A person didn't need a flag or to sit on the throne to become king. In this kingless world, there was still a king.



After a while, I examined the yellow meteorite they left behind.

A yellow meteorite.

The meteorite, also called the moon stone, was usually a star pierce that hovered in other dimensions.

It was truly the same as I read in the novel.

It was from the exhilarating magic power felt when I touched it, the faint light from the opaque interior and the white stripes all over the meteorite. The yellow meteorite clearly had the power to counter the disaster.

Then a system message was heard.

[The 'moon stone' wants to provide you with a high level strength.]

I refused the meteorite's offer and the power returned to the meteorite.

The moon stone basically had the power of the night and the outside species would receive this power. Perhaps the cannibals who received the power of the night were able to evolve into the outside species, the werewolves.

[The moon stone' gives off a feeling of familiarity.]

However, the real use of this meteorite wasn't simply to evolve the outside species. Even a few hundred werewolves couldn't prevent the future disasters.

Of course, a few thousand would help but then another disaster would come from the high number of outside species and the power of the demon kings.

"I feel like a volunteer... Hey, did you find something?"

As I was examining the meteorite, Han Sooyoung was taking care of the survivors lying nearby. It was a little unexpected but she was probably targeting coins.

[The constellations of the Absolute Good system are touched by Han Sooyoung's good works.]

In a place filled with the demon king's household, the dominations would be bigger than usual.

Indeed, a human's double-sidedness was profound.

Among the constellations of the Absolute Good system, there might be the Abyssal Black Flame Dragon. The second Sponsor Selection was coming up so Han Sooyoung would be looking at him. I looked around and said,

"The avatars are useful."

Dozens of avatars were quickly organizing the surroundings. The corpses of the outside species were burned, while the terrible cages and human butcher stores were also demolished. She earned coins while getting a nosebleed...

Han Sooyoung wiped the blood and asked, "When are you going to tell me?"

"What?"

"I'm talking about that."

I realized her question wasn't about the meteorite. "Are you still worrying about that?"

"How can I not care?"

There were two types of 'readers' that she didn't know about. In addition, there seemed to be a connection between the two. It was natural for Han Sooyoung who was the 'last to get off' to pay attention.

"Who knows?"

"...Don't you know?"

"I only know the woman, the leader of the group."

"The Wanderer King?"

I nodded and said, "That person isn't someone who got off. To be precise, she never read the original."

“What? Then how does she know the contents of the plot?”

“By talking directly to me.”

Han Sooyoung looked like she had been hit in the back of the head with a hammer. “You told others about the story? Why?”

“I needed something to tell her when I met her.” I gave her a moment before continuing. “Because I had nothing else to say to her.”

Maybe she sensed my dark mood, making Han Sooyoung hesitate as she was about to question me. She probably had a lot that she wanted to ask me. Who was the woman and what was her relationship with me?

Han Sooyoung was silent for a while before speaking again. “I don’t know what your relationship with that woman is but is it okay to leave her alone? If there are more people besides us who knows the future...”

I understood her concerns but it should be fine. At the very least, that woman was a person with principles and she couldn’t carelessly use the future information.

I knocked on the moon stone and opened my mouth.

“Rather, there is something more important. From now on, we will wake this up.”

“What? This thing?” Han Sooyoung watched me like I was insane. “You want to wake up the disaster?”

“Why are you so startled? Didn’t you do it before?”

Han Sooyoung had incited the Night of the Prophets and awakened the fire dragon, Lesser Igneel.

“Hey! I picked a small disaster. This one...”

“It isn’t a disaster.”

“...Then what is it?”

“It looks like you were negligent in your plagiarism. Don’t you remember? Do you

really not know what will appear here when the scenario starts?”

Han Sooyoung stared at me before turning on her phone and reading her own novel.

“Ah... This, perhaps...”

“Have you realized? You copied it well.”

“Shut up. But the main scenario hasn’t opened yet. Is it okay to do this? Moreover, what if a plausibility request occurs?”

“It won’t happen.”

“The intermediate dokkaebi hates you...”

“Then I will deal with him.” Right now, he would be busy being reprimanded by the Bureau. “We will start injected mana. Based on my calculations, it will hatch in 10 hours. I will take four hours and you will take six hours.”

“Why do I have to inject mana for six hours?”

“Isn’t your magic power level higher?” At this moment, the number of avatars decreased dramatically. I noticed something. “Tell me honestly. What level is your magic power?”

“Why should I tell you?”

“It is information needed to clear the scenario.”

[The provisions of the Temporary Contract will take effect.]

Han Sooyoung’s expression distorted.

“...Level 55.”

I was honestly surprised. I thought it would be over level 40 because she could control dozens of avatars but level 5... this was almost approaching the scenario limit.

Her physique and strength were relatively low so she must’ve been putting all her coins into magic power.

“I will change it. I will take two hours. You will take eight hours.”

“Hey! That’s unfair! And now I have run out of magic power.”

I opened the Dokkaebi Bag and bought a few Intermediate Magic Power Recovery Potions.

“Then drink this.”

‘What is this?’

“Coin item.”

“...Is your sponsor huge? You are just giving something like this to me?”

“I am the one who is big.”

Han Sooyoung glanced at me. “Did you put anything strange in it?”

“Then I’ll start first.”

I touched the moon stone and started injecting magic power. 10 hours later, the guy inside the meteorite would wake up.



How long was I asleep? I opened my eyes at the sound of someone waking up.

“Hey, get up quickly! That guy has started to move!”

Han Sooyoung shouted with a nervous face while touching the meteorite.

The meteorite had started to crack.

It was a phenomenon similar to when the fire dragon broke out of the meteorite. It wasn’t an aggressive reaction but if I said one word wrong... both of us might die here.

A brilliant light emerged from the moon stone, lifting some of the darkness of the night.

It was an awakening of a powerful presence that gave off a heavy pressure just looking at it.

# Chapter 78

## The Fifth Scenario (3)

The broken pieces of moon stone fell to the ground. A being scattering a silver mane was hatching. If he was a cub, I could control him using the ‘imprinting’ phenomenon. But this being wasn’t such a naive creature.

[You have encountered a creature from a different world for the first time in this scenario.]

[Affinity with the species from a different world has increased.]

[2,000 coins have been rewarded.]

[You have received a bonus skill for smooth communication with the other world species.]

[‘Other World Interpreter Lv. 1’ has been acquired.]

I could hear Han Sooyoung gulp next to me.

It was natural to be nervous since the encounter with the other world species was the prelude to the fifth scenario.

It was completely different from the previous scenarios. The slightest mistake in the fifth scenario could cause all of Seoul to disappear.

[The exclusive skill ‘Other World Interpreter Lv. 1’ is activated.]

[The effect of the item Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar has increased understanding of the specific language.]

The item I got from the fire dragon would be helpful from now on.

[Automatic interpretation has started.]

I heard a voice from the shining moon stone.

““#%#\$... damn, already?”

The creature curled up inside the moon stone grumbled and raised its body. The silver



mane reminded me of a wolf at first glance, but I knew he was different from a wolf. Above all, I knew the species of this person.

{They are three metres tall. The dominant species of the world 'Chronos' that can transform using the moon stone at night. They are fighters with monstrous physical strength who use the power of the wind.}

One of the five dominant species of Chronos.

"I am the great first wolf."

{In Chronos, they call the first wolf 'Imyuntar'.}

"I am Lycaon of the Imyuntar."

There was a creepy breathing sound in the darkness of the night, causing the surroundings to be still. I made eye contact with him while Han Sooyoung hid behind me. Of course, I didn't back down.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Lycaon Isparang

**Age:** 371 years old.

**Constellation Support:** Shadow of a Destroyed World

**Private Attribute:** Noble Imyuntar (Hero), Humiliated Survivor (Rare)

**Exclusive Skills:** Way of the Wind Lv. 9, Advanced Weapons Training Lv. 9, Roar of the Battlefield Lv. 8, Sage's Insight Lv. 4, Steel Skin Lv. 8, Acting Lv. 4...

**Stigma:** Destruction Delivery Lv. 1

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 75, Strength Lv. 75, Agility Lv. 75, Magic Power Lv. 75.

**Overall Evaluation:** One of the five dominant species of the destroyed Chronos. After losing his world, he invested in the Star Stream and became a guide in the scenario. He is characterized by always looking at the world with eyes filled with remorse.

+

As expected, the hero of another world had great skills and stats. The average stats was level 75. He exceeded the current limit of the scenario. He was the goal of many representatives.

Lycaon's blue eyes looked down at me like I was interesting.

"You are the ones who woke me up?"

I nodded.

"I see... Is it finally time? Congratulations on clearing the tutorial scenarios, warriors of this world."

It sounded like a tutorial. It was funny how he imitated the dokkaebi for dramatic effect.

There was no tutorial in this world. Every scenario was an actual event and the dead couldn't come back again. Then what type of tutorial existed?

"Those who are facing extinction. First, I deeply regret that 'disaster' has come to your world."

Lycaon spoke while looking up at the sky.

He was looking at the Great Hall over Seoul, Korea.

A huge vortex reminiscent of a black hole was gradually increasing its volume every moment. Lycaon would've also seen the Great Hall on the day his world was destroyed.

All guides in the scenarios were those who lost their homes to the scenarios.

"Since I am here, you can rest assured. I am a 'guide' to stop the destruction of this world. I will train you to prepare for the disaster and give you the necessary instructions. And..."

It came out quite hastily but he was good at reciting the words. He probably got a manual from a dokkaebi.

Lycaon suddenly stopped talking.

"...By the way, you are the only ones who woke me up?"

"It is just us."

“Strange. The fourth scenario isn’t cleared? If it had been cleared properly, the five guides, including myself, would be hatched in the same place... Where is the owner of the Absolute Throne?”

He was right. Originally, the five guides, including Lycaon, would gather as soon as the master of the Absolute Throne was born.

I spoke to Lycaon. “We have no king.”

“There is no king... did the master of the Absolute Throne die? No way. At present, there is no way to kill the master of the Absolute Throne.”

Lycaon expressed his disbelief in a threatening manner.

“There was no owner of the Absolute Throne from the beginning.”

“What does that mean?”

“We cleared the fourth scenario without getting the Absolute Throne.”

Flames appeared in Lycaon’s eyes.

“Are you lying to me right now? Such a thing is impossible! The fourth scenario doesn’t end until someone takes the throne.”

“There is also the method of destroying the Absolute Throne.”

Lycaon’s expression stiffened. He seemed to grasp my words and his eyes widened.

“...Perhaps?”

The embarrassment of such a noble hero was really worth seeing. His silver mane quivered as he looked closely at me.

“The numerous constellations... surely you didn’t destroy the throne...?”

“That’s right.”

“How could you do such a terrible thing?”

Lycaon let out many curses that I couldn't hear properly. Han Sooyoung looked at the bellowing Lycaon and whispered to me, "Hey, was it that serious? For you...?"

Han Sooyoung also received Other World Interpreter and heard the conversation. Lycaon screamed before I could answer.

"Why did you do that? Now there is no one in the world under the banner of that great god?"

"No."

"Ahh! The Star Stream constellations didn't care about Chronos! Now this world is ruined! Living things with less intelligence than a kobold should do their jobs!"

I felt scorn as I watched the despairing Lycaon.

Yes, this was the essence of these guys. On the surface, they were dispatched to help this world. However, they had a separate purpose that I would never let happen.

"Prince of the Imyuntar, Lycaon Isparang. It is too early to be frustrated."

The prideful prince of the Imyuntar immediately responded to the change in my attitude.

He growled out angrily. "Cheeky human. Show respect in front of a great species! You don't know the weight of your sin!"

"Lycaon, didn't you see anything when your world perished? The Imyuntar were the ruling species of Chronos, not Earth."

Lycaon's expression stiffened. I didn't miss this gap and continued, "There were five disasters that destroyed your world."

"What..."

"The southern continent of Chronos where you lived was destroyed by the dragon. Right?"

Lycaon's eyes filled with disbelief. "How do you know this?"

“Fire Dragon Igneel. The Disaster of Burning Hell. It is the name of the disaster that destroyed your world.”

The small disaster that I killed, Lesser Igneel was originally a ‘disaster.’

A single flame could turn a small city into a sea of fire and a single flap of its wings could destroy a lower species.

The southern continent of Chronos was destroyed by him. The fire dragon that woke up from a meteorite.

Lycaon gritted his teeth. “You are speaking like it is someone else’s story. You will regret it. Pretty soon, your world will also struggle in that hot hellfire.”

“Don’t worry. Igneel won’t come down to this world.”

“What?”

“I have already killed him. There will be no ‘Burning Hell’ disaster in this world.”

Lycaon had a bemused expression, like he heard his home had been brought back.

“That is the best joke I’ve ever heard. Is there such a joke in this world? Is it fun to joke about the world that will soon cease to exist?”

Well... of course not. I pulled out a blue coloured medallion. Then like magic, Lycaon’s laughter subsided.

The Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar. Lycaon’s shaking hands reached out to take the medallion.

“W-Why... how do you have this...?”

The Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar was proof that a person had hunted a disaster dragon.

“Lycaon of the Imyuntar. Pay respects to the protector.”

Lycaon’s body slowly fell. First his knees touched the ground, slowly followed by his head. There was a severe shaking of his eyes like he couldn’t admit it.

“Do it properly.”

Before long, his head touched the ground. He was over three metres tall so it wasn't until he fell down that his eyes were lower than mine. I looked down at Lycaon.

This was the useful part of catching the fire dragon.

Han Sooyoung wasn't able to grasp the situation yet and looked at Lycaon with confused eyes. I was almost killed by Han Sooyoung's brutality but she ended up making things easier.

Lycaon spoke in a quivering voice. “Great dragon hunter... With the benefit of hindsight, I would like to ask you to forgive my rudeness.”

“My name is Kim Dokja.”

Once again, I thought that my name wasn't that great. This would be a great scene if my name was Yoo Jonghyuk. I added a quick remark to diffuse the awkward atmosphere.

“Lycaon. There is something I need you to do.”

Lycaon carefully looked up.”

“Teach me the Way of the Wind, which is the secret technique of your people.”

Lycaon's eyes slowly became bigger. This was my purpose behind hatching Lycaon.

The southern disaster of the fire dragon had disappeared so the first disaster in the fifth scenario would surely be the ‘east disaster.’

In order to prevent the catastrophe in the east, I needed to gain the secret technique of the Imyuntar.

Way of the Wind It was the only answer to the disaster of the east, the ‘Disaster of Questions.’

An hour later, I explained the situation to Han Sooyoung who hadn't been able to follow the conversation.

"Then the medallion you got from killing the fire dragon is an important thing for them?"

"Yes."

"I still don't understand... the fire dragon you killed at that time was one of the disasters?"

"That's right."

"...Then in the fifth scenario, we have to prevent four instead of five disasters?"

"You seem to understand yet not understand?"

Han Sooyoung frowned.

"I still don't understand. Didn't you kill the 'Lesser Igneel'? Isn't he a deteriorated dragon so why is he the disaster? Is this also a development of Ways of Survival?"

"...Everything that hatches from a disaster meteor is a disaster. That guy came out instead of Igneel so Igneel won't appear in this disaster. In addition, Igneel didn't appear in the original. Igneel's hatchling came out. It is only the fifth scenario so how can something like that wake up already?"

"...You speak well. Are you a spokesman for Ways of Survival? Are you actually the writer?"

The scenario difficulty was ridiculous but it was adjusted so that it could be cleared if people risked their lives.

...Of course, the adjustment was carefully controlled.

The Lesser Igneel, the deteriorated version of the hatchling had annihilated the prophets, which could be called the elite troops at the time. Was that all? I was once killed by that dragon. If it wasn't for the King of No Killing, I wouldn't be standing here.

If Lesser Igneel had been released into Seoul and continued to level up, Seoul would've ended up the same as Lycaon's hometown.

Of course, Han Sooyoung had no knowledge of such matters and was busy complaining.

"Anyway, aren't the disasters a bigger deal than I thought? I have a lot of trouble grasping the scale because of the way it was expressed in Ways of Survival..."

"We were lucky with the fire dragon. The disasters that will come will be in their original state. Terrible beings will appear."

It was pleasant to see the expression of the plagiarist writer at the word 'original.'

"Then what should we do?"

"We have to use that guy."

I looked at Lycaon, who was preparing for the training in a distant place.

Han Sooyoung asked, "He looks strong. Do you want him to fight?"

"That guy is a coward. In addition, the guides are prohibited from fighting against disasters of another world. We have to take care of our work on our own."

I heard Lycaon calling out to me.

"Protector, I am ready."

Protector was the title for the owner of the medallion. I told him to call my name a few times but Lycaon didn't yield.

"From now on, I will teach you the secret technique of my clan, the Way of the Wind."

Way of the Wind. It was a hidden skill that allowed the user to use the wind like their own limbs.

Among the other species, only those with the Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar could learn this skill.



Yoo Jonghyuk was originally scheduled to obtain this but not this time. I couldn't give the strong person all the good skills.

"Then I will start."

For the next three hours, I sweated hard to learn the skill.

It would be nice if the system had a message like 'Would you like to learn the skill?' but this wasn't possible. It was only possible to gain the skill by learning it directly.

I had read the novel so I was able to follow Lycaon's movements a little bit. To be exact, I thought I was following it.

Approximately one more hour passed. Lycaon hesitated before opening his mouth. "Protector. I'm sorry to say this but..."

# Chapter 79

## The Fifth Scenario (4)

I gasped and asked, “What? Is it over?”

“No, that is...”

“...Then what am I doing wrong?”

“To be precise...”

“Don’t drag it out and tell me quickly.”

“It is all wrong.”

It was so sincere that I sat down like I had received a nuclear punch. I breathed roughly and looked up at the sky. All of a sudden, the Great Hall floating in the sky seemed bigger. It seemed to be mocking me.

Lycaon looked at me and prepared for the kill.

“Protector... you don’t have any qualities suited for Way of the Wind. No, to be honest, you don’t have the qualities for almost every skill.”

If this went wrong, the world might perish because of me.



A few more hours passed like this and then days went by. There were eight days left until the start of the fifth scenario.

I didn’t give up and continued to learn Way of the Wind. Of course, it wasn’t possible.

*Grrr.* “Protector, it is better to give up...”

“...Why can’t I learn it?”

Han Sooyoung giggled beside me and said, “Why? It is because you have no talent.”

“That isn’t possible.”

“Why not? You aren’t the protagonist. Do you think that you became Yoo Jonghyuk because you have been doing a good job lately?”

My chest was sore like I had been stabbed. I spoke with a frown, “But I understand everything in my head.”

“Ah, yes. Everyone thinks they can go to Seoul National University.”

“I’m telling the truth.”

I remembered most of the enlightenment associated with Way of the Wind. I felt so frustrated one hour ago that I got a second battery from the survivors and read the text again.

“There is a gale in the right hand and a storm in the left hand. The Way of the Wind will be opened when the straight lines and the curves meet.”

“H-How... You really understand it!”

Lycaon felt admiration from where he was listening to me.

In fact, the words I just muttered was Yoo Jonghyuk’s enlightenment in Ways of Survival. In Ways of Survival, Yoo Jonghyuk gained insight in a single ‘phrase’ followed by a Chinese character. He learned Way of the Wind in just 5 minutes.

But it wasn’t that simple and I had wasted two days already.

“How can I do this?” I grumbled.

“Huh? You just said it... there is no representation more accurate than that.”

“No, it was a metaphor.”

“Your words weren’t a metaphor.”

It was enough to make me go crazy. This time the problem wasn’t solved by the

writer's description in Ways of Survival. It was because the explanation was just complete noise to me and the Fourth Wall was also useless at this moment. Fourth Wall gave me judgment and calmness but it didn't give me talent.

I felt a little feverish as I spoke to Lycaon. "Then you should try this. One wind will meet another wind to form ying and yang. Once again, one wind will meet another wind to form the principles of negative and positive."

Yin and Yang was a concept from Earth but Lycaon understood it instantly.

"How could you have gained such profound insight?"

"Don't just speak it, spread it directly through your body."

"So it is like this."

Lycaon concentrated and winds from different directions started to form around him. The two winds swirled, adding a hot and cold energy to the wind.

...To be honest, I thought it was ridiculous. He just heard it and could carry out the technique instantly? Then why couldn't I do the same?

My pride was provoked.

"Then how about this? 'Four winds meet and form a defense. Then another four winds are added, making it the Eight Trigrams. Therefore, wind is everywhere yet exists nowhere.' Can you do this as well?"

This sentence was the enlightenment that Yoo Jonghyuk gained in the 9th round of regression. This time Lycaon made a puzzled expression. I spoke in a triumphant voice.

"You can't? This is how I am feeling."

"Pushov... no, Protector. I really appreciate it."

...What?

[The 5th grade other world species 'Prince Lycaon of the Imyuntar' has received great enlightenment.]

Lycaon suddenly turned and started practicing.

[You have a great impact on the evolution of Prince Lycaon of the Imyuntar.]

[Lycaon of the Imyuntar feels a great appreciation towards you.]

[Some constellations from the ruined world 'Chronos' thanks you.]

[2,000 coins have been sponsored.]

I finally figured out what was going on. That damn wolf gained enlightenment by hearing what I said.

Han Sooyoung was laughing so hard that she was holding her belly.

I felt belated frustration. Maybe I knew Ways of Survival but I didn't know anything about myself.

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' admires your patience.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' is disappointed in your weakness.]

Looking at the system messages appearing in the air, I thought about signing a contract with a sponsor. Of course, it was impossible due to the contract with Bihyung.

[So why did you break the throne? Fool.]

I looked up and saw a transparent figure floating in the air. I opened the dokkaebi communication.

'Is it okay to talk now? What about the intermediate dokkaebi?'

[He won't come for a while. He is being properly disciplined. He won't come before the fifth scenario opens. Ah, my channel also upgraded again. Hopefully I can reach the intermediate level next month. It is all thanks to you.]

'That's good.'

[Why don't you look happy? It is also good for you if I do well.]

'You will be busy when you reach intermediate level.'

Bihyung laughed at my words.

[Brat, don't worry. I don't know about other incarnations but won't I look after you? These days there are many intermediate dokkaebi at the Bureau but... it is noisy because some bastards are twisting their probabilities extensively.]

I didn't need him to tell me who it was.

[Oh, of course it isn't you.]

It was completely Yoo Jonghyuk.

In fact, Yoo Jonghyuk's growth rate was impossible through any possibilities. He was growing at a rate that was close to a cheat.

[There is one abnormally fast growing guy and the Bureau can't touch him... I think his sponsor is probably a formidable guy.]

Perhaps Yoo Jonghyuk's 'possibilities' wouldn't be a problem in the future.

In the end, the 'possibility' wasn't a problem if there was a constellation capable of that 'possibility.' And it was possible for Yoo Jonghyuk's sponsor.

[By the way, why don't you buy a growth package? I'll sell it for a cheap price if you buy it now. Aren't you suffering right now because you can't learn that skill? This package...]

'I won't buy it. In any case, isn't the growth package only applicable to skills already learnt? Did you show up just to eat money?'

The growth package had a penalty when abused. It was why even the powerful Yoo Jonghyuk didn't use the growth package.

[Sheesh, you knew...?]

Bihyung muttered with a dissatisfied expression.

'But it is time to buy something.'

[Coins Possessed: 62,372 C]

I still had a lot of coins despite raising my stats due to selling the fire dragon parts.

If I had 40,000 more coins, I would've bought Sky Dragon Steps but I couldn't this time.

Bihyung's face became rosy.

[Oh, really? What do you want to buy?]

'Aren't you going to receive new coin items soon?'

[...How do you know? Did you plant a mole?]

'It is natural since a new scenario will open soon. At that time, tell me. I'll buy it.'

[Hoh, you will...]

I turned off the dokkaebi communication. I didn't want to talk to him when there was nothing to say. I looked back and Lycaon was still gaining enlightenment. Han Sooyoung approached me and raised her chin.

"Hey, what are you going to do now?"

"...I don't know. I'm still thinking."

"Then let me learn it."

"What?"

"Or let the other survivors learn it."

I looked at the people around us.

It was two days after the coin farms collapsed. The rescued survivors were working together and caring for the other wounded.

The atmosphere was quite different from the survivors of Deputy Yoon's coin farm. Perhaps Han Sooyoung's hypocrisy-filled good deeds had changed them. It turned out that hypocrisy was a good thing.

Han Sooyoung opened her mouth again. "Isn't it just learning Way of the Wind? Does it matter who learns it?"

“...Right, anyone can learn it.”

“Why do you insist on being the one to learn it? Are you trying to get the attention of the constellations alone?”

It wasn't wrong, but it wasn't exactly right.

“Only people with the protection medallion can learn Way of the Wind.”

“Then give it to me.”

“It isn't transferable.”

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that the statement is true.]

This woman really...

“You are the first person who is more suspicious than Yoo Jonghyuk.”

“You brought it up. This skill, Yoo Jonghyuk should've originally learnt it?”

“That's right.”

“Then why do you have to go through this trouble? You can leave it to Yoo Jonghyuk. It isn't too late now so let's go find Yoo Jonghyuk. He is growing well. That guy would manage it somehow.”

“Yoo Jonghyuk doesn't listen to what other people will say.”

“I'll tempt him.”

I stared at Han Sooyoung before looking away. “Yoo Jonghyuk doesn't like the body of a child.”

“Are you ignoring me now?”

“Besides, there is also a problem in finding Yoo Jonghyuk.”

Even Yoo Jonghyuk couldn't learn Way of the Wind without the protection medallion.



It meant the medallion needed to be taken from me, but ownership wouldn't be released until I died.

In other words, Yoo Jonghyuk must kill me. Besides, even if he had the medallion...

"You know that I beat him up pretty badly in the end. Once we meet, he will definitely try to kill me."

Yoo Jonghyuk flew from my punch filled with 100 strength. In the meantime, the eyes that wanted to tear me to pieces was still vivid.

"...Well, he was really bold when he cut off my head." Han Sooyoung stroked her neck as memories of Chungmuro Station surfaced.

"Besides, finding out where he is now..."

At this time, an uproar was heard in the distance.

"There is someone injured. Please help! It is serious!"

Someone had found a wounded person nearby.

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' is looking forward to your comradeship.]  
[Some constellations are expecting you to treat the wounded.]

The messages of the constellations, including Uriel, arrived. What was going on?

I took Han Sooyoung and headed there.

After a while, I found the cause of the problem and glared at Bihyung floating in the air.

Bihyung sniggered at me.

[I didn't know about this.]

The bleeding Yoo Jonghyuk was waiting for me there.

# Chapter 80

## The Fifth Scenario (5)

I stepped away from the bleeding Yoo Jonghyuk lying down and spoke to Bihyung.

‘Is this your doing?’

Even if Yoo Jonghyuk was nearby, he couldn’t be found in such a timely manner. It was clear that Bihyung had made a sub scenario to bring Yoo Jonghyuk over here.

[Are you suspecting me? Is there evidence?]

There was no evidence but I felt it in my heart.

[The constellation ‘Demon-like Judge of Fire’ is concerned with your judgment.]  
[500 coins have been sponsored.]

I felt a strong belief.

Han Sooyoung whispered to me as I looked down at Yoo Jonghyuk with a dumb expression. “...We found him. What are you going to do?”

“What else?”

“Shouldn’t you save him? This jerk, he is the protagonist.”

Of course I had to save him. However, if I saved this bastard, I would surely die. Han Sooyoung looked scared that Yoo Jonghyuk would wake up straight away.

“Do you have anything that will restrain him?”

“Yoo Jonghyuk won’t tolerate them.”

“Lock him up...”

“Then he will commit suicide.”

“But if he goes back... Damn, what will happen if he regresses?”

Han Sooyoung belatedly came to this realization.

What would happen to this world if Yoo Jonghyuk went back? It was one of my biggest challenges living in this world.

“We have to stop it. Nobody knows what will happen.”

It was right to assume the worst when things were unknown. If I made a mistake and the world was reset, my existence would disappear.

By the way... how did this jerk end up like this?

I looked closely at him. There was a wound around the belly. All internal organs and ribs were broken. It felt like someone incredibly powerful had hit Yoo Jonghyuk in one blow...

At this moment, I stared blankly at my fist. Perhaps?

“What is with that expression? Why is your face suddenly dark?”

“...It is nothing.”

All of a sudden, I was convinced. He was hit with a fist filled with 100 strength...

Then he had been like this for two days. I felt sorry with the benefit of hindsight. With this, it might not be possible to restore my relationship with Yoo Jonghyuk.

As I slowly looked from his belly to his face, I took a few steps back because I got goosebumps.

“...Shit.”

Yoo Jonghyuk was staring at me with bloody and teary eyes. His lips were moving and he was obviously saying something like ‘Dead, Kim Dokja.’

I thought Han Sooyoung was beside me but she had run away as quickly as possible. I shouted towards Yoo Jonghyuk from a distance.

“Hey! Can’t you release your anger?”

“...”

“Wasn’t it a fair fight? Didn’t you try to kill me as well?”

Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes didn’t change. Dammit...

I had no choice. Yoo Jonghyuk had to survive here, even if he killed me. I might be able to stop the Disaster of Questions without Yoo Jonghyuk but I wouldn’t be able to prevent the other disasters and the world would be destroyed.

Why was the protagonist of Ways of Survival such a person? The story would’ve been easier if it was Lee Hyunsung or Jung Heewon.

...This wasn’t the time for complaints.

I decided to use a skill. It was obvious what he was thinking but I needed to check.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader’s Viewpoint stage 2 has been activated!]

At this moment, something amazing happened.

{Kim Dokja.}

My eyes widened as I watched Yoo Jonghyuk.

...Did he just call out to me?

{You can hear my words. Isn’t that right? If I look back at what you have done so far...}

...What?

{Say that you can hear me. If you don’t move now, the world will...}

I looked at him in a slightly confused state.

{... It was my mistake. Dammit.}

Yoo Jonghyuk’s eyes slowly closed. I hesitated for a moment before approaching Yoo

Jonghyuk. Yoo Jonghyuk didn't seem to have the power to fight me at all in this state. Besides... I didn't see any animosity towards me.

"Yoo Jonghyuk. Can you hear me?"

Yoo Jonghyuk struggled to raise his eyelids, only to close them again. It was strange.

No matter how badly wounded he was, he would've automatically triggered Recovery when he was hit. Then why was he still in this state?

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

[There is too much information about this person. Character List is converted to Summary List.]

+

[Character List]

**Name:** Yoo Jonghyuk.

**Private Attribute:** Regressor (3rd turn) (Myth), Pro Gamer (Rare), Supreme King (Hero)

**Exclusive Skills:** Sage's Eyes Lv. 8, Hand to Hand Combat Lv. 9, Advanced Weapons Training Lv. 8, Mental Barrier Lv. 6, Hundred Steps Godly Fists Lv. 6, Red Phoenix Shunpo Lv. 6... Omitted...

**Stigma:** Regression Lv. 3, Transmission Lv. 3

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 60, Strength Lv. 60, Agility Lv. 60, Magic Power Lv. 60.

\* Currently in an abnormal condition.

\* Currently, this person is affected by the Thousand Spirits Poison.

+

There were no problems with his stats. Yoo Jonghyuk was still one of the strongest incarnations in Seoul and his skills had grown compared to the last time I saw him.

The problem was his abnormal status.

Yoo Jonghyuk didn't have the skills Thousand Poisons Resistance or Immunity to Ten Thousand Poisons yet. Therefore, poison was currently one of Yoo Jonghyuk's few weaknesses.

He was like this because he was poisoned.

I looked closer and saw that there were blue blood vessels all over his body. It hadn't

been long since he was poisoned. Fortunately, he was still alive.

But it was strange. I knew of only one person who could infect Yoo Jonghyuk with Thousand Spirits Poison at this time...

A woman watching me in the distance asked, "You... are you Kim Dokja-ssi?"

I nodded. I looked at the woman who brought Yoo Jonghyuk here.

"He was like this the whole time. He kept asking me to take him to Kim Dokja..."

Yoo Jonghyuk?

I looked down at Yoo Jonghyuk's face, which was more blue-tinged than before, and instantly had many thoughts. The terrified Han Sooyoung who had been fleeing came back.

"Hey, what's going on?" Han Sooyoung poked my shoulder but I didn't answer.

I struggled for a moment before speaking to Bihyung.

'Bihyung, open the Dokkaebi Bag.'

[Now do you understand? This wasn't my doing.]

'Open the bag.'

After confirming my remaining coins, I found a coin item that could cure Yoo Jonghyuk.

He was affected by the THousand Spirits Poison so it couldn't be removed simply by eating the Ellain Forest Essence. I quickly turned on the text and checked some of the ingredients before purchasing items from the Dokkaebi Bag.

[You have purchased one Midday Tryst.]

[You have purchased one Old Barbara Branch.]

[You have purchased two Putna Daltun Horns.]

[You have purchased one Detox Potato.]

[You have purchased two Aintern Temple's Purification Water.]

[You have purchased one Ellain Forest Essence.]

[A total of 7,370 coins are consumed.]

It was an unexpected bleeding service. I asked the survivors around me for a small bucket, lit the Magic Power Stove and poured the ingredients into it. Han Sooyoung asked,

“What are you going to make?”

“An antidote.”

“Did you decide to save him?”

I nodded and replied, “This bastard, he came to me deliberately.”

“Deliberately? Why?”

“I don’t know.”

“Did he come to ask you for help? I don’t think Yoo Jonghyuk would come all this way to kill you.”

“That is impossible for Yoo Jonghyuk.”

“How do you know?”

“I know. He is that type of bastard.”

I adjusted the flames of the stove.

Fire blazed and the contents in the bucket started to boil. Based on the colour and form, it looked like food from the Death Valley goblins. It might seem terrible but this soup was an excellent antidote.

Han Sooyoung placed her hands on her knees and stared at the terrible food. “By the way, was Yoo Jonghyuk such a bad person in Ways of Survival?”

“...What?”

“It was a thought that I had. Didn’t Yoo Jonghyuk save a lot of people and do good deeds? Of course, he is like a psychopath but isn’t he moving for the people? He is fighting to save the world. I don’t want to admit it because I am a bad person.”

When I thought about it, Han Sooyoung's words weren't completely wrong. I laughed and said, "Your defense of Yoo Jonghyuk is energetic because you haven't read as far as me."

"But that is that and this is this. You can't judge people by only looking at one side."

It was an unexpected conversation so I looked up at Han Sooyoung for a while.

Han Sooyoung was smiling coldly.

"No matter how much you claim that my work is plagiarism, it has actually never been affected by Ways of Survival."

"...You almost convinced me without saying that. It is a real pity."

I said this but my mind was a bit complicated.

What type of person was Yoo Jonghyuk? Could I really say that I was familiar with the existence of Yoo Jonghyuk?

I was able to confidently answer until a while ago. I was the only reader who read all of Ways of Survival.

But I felt that some of my answers were being diluted in the soup. Did I know Yoo Jonghyuk at all?

Not long after that, the soup started boiling.

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' is impressed with your good deed.]  
[The constellations of the absolute good system support your good deed.]  
[3,000 coins have been sponsored.]

It was rare for a person to be damaged by sponsorship. Shit.

I approached Yoo Jonghyuk with the soup. Han Sooyoung brought me a spoon from a nearby store. I scooped up the soup with the spoon and put it in Yoo Jonghyuk's mouth. Han Sooyoung watched me blowing on the soup.

"You are acting like a wife."



“Do you want to do this?”

“I don’t want to.”

In fact, I wouldn’t have given the job to her anyway. It was due to the system message that I heard every time I scooped up a spoonful of soup.

[The constellation ‘Demon-like Judge of Fire’ is impressed with your good deed.]  
[500 coins have been sponsored.]

It was tremendous to receive coins every time I fed him.

[The constellation ‘Demon-like Judge of Fire’ is impressed with your good deed.]  
[300 coins have been sponsored.]

I thought it was a loss to me but it turned out to be a huge honey event. Indeed, people should live a good life.

However, I started to feel a bit strange after 10 spoonfuls.

[The constellation ‘Demon-like Judge of Fire’ is impressed with your good deed.]  
[400 coins have been sponsored.]

...Was this constellation really impressed with the good deed? Would it last until the bowl was empty?

Yoo Jonghyuk started to open his eyes with a slight groan. He was still in bad shape but he was gradually healing from the poison. I didn’t miss his opportunity and took out one item.

[You have used the Midday Tryst.]  
[You are seeking consent from the target.]

Midday Tryst was an item that allowed for a one on one conversation with the selected target for a specified time period. If I had a bit more coins, I would’ve learnt the Sound Transmission skill but I didn’t have that much to spare. Therefore, I chose the next best thing.

[The target has agreed to communicate with you.]  
[The Midday Tryst has started.]

Once I sent a message to Yoo Jonghyuk, a small messenger window emerged in front of me.

*–Hey, can you hear me?*

The connection was formed.

I purchased this item for three reasons.

One was because Yoo Jonghyuk's tongue was paralyzed by the effect of Thousand Spirits Poison and the second reason was to avoid leaking information to Han Sooyoung. The third and most important reason was that I didn't want to confirm to Yoo Jonghyuk that I could read his thoughts.

The next moment, Yoo Jonghyuk's message came up.

*–Kim Dokja, move to the east right now.*

# Chapter 81

## SSS Grade Talent (1)

I frowned at Yoo Jonghyuk's words.

Move to the east right now? I saved his life and now he was giving me an order?

I was a bit annoyed but Yoo Jonghyuk spoke before I could say anything.

*–The Disaster of Questions is waking up.*

...What?

I was frustrated because I couldn't understand what he was saying and Yoo Jonghyuk frowned.

*–Someone is waking the disaster up.*



After a while, Han Sooyoung and I left Lycaon who was still receiving enlightenment and headed for Gangdong-gu.

It was at a tremendous pace.

"Can we just leave that wolf?"

"The Imyuntar can feel the master of the medallion. He will come find us when he wakes up. Rather..." I looked at Han Sooyoung running beside me and said, "Can't you carry him? You can use your avatar."

"I don't want to." The disgusted Han Sooyoung quickly moved away from me.

"Didn't you say earlier that Yoo Jonghyuk might not be a bad guy?"

"That is that and this is this. Isn't he the one who cut my head off?"

I couldn't say anything to refute her words. Yoo Jonghyuk spoke through Midday Tryst.

*–You can leave me. I don't need help.*

*–Don't be so prideful. I really will abandon you.*

I couldn't see Yoo Jonghyuk's face because he was being carried on my back.

*–When will you be able to move by yourself?*

*–In two days.*

*–Will you kill me when you recover?*

I asked half-jokingly but this bastard didn't give an answer. I deliberately reduced the pace at which I was moving.

*–Then I can't help you. How can I believe a guy who is trying to kill me? I will help you if you swear an Oath of Existence. Swear not to kill me until the end of this regression.*

*–I can't do that.*

Lousy bastard.

*–Then swear you won't hurt me until the fifth scenario is over. If you can't do that, I really won't help you.*

Yoo Jonghyuk thought for a moment before replying.

*–I swear.*

Surprisingly, Yoo Jonghyuk agreed to the oath. The Oath of Existence. It was a constraint on the person who swore it.

A cold flame emerged from Yoo Jonghyuk's body and dug into his heart. If he broke the oath, this blue flames will burn his heart. I felt a bit relieved but then Yoo Jonghyuk continued.

*–I won't kill you. But...*

*–But?*

*–I will hit you once.*

*–What?*

I was dazed for a moment. He was going to hit me?

*–Is this because of two days ago?*

Yoo Jonghyuk didn't answer again. I thought it was strange that Yoo Jonghyuk agreed to the oath so easily.

*–... It is one hit. I'll do it gently. Understood?*

Yes, it might not be bad if one hit could restore my relationship with Yoo Jonghyuk. In my current state, I wouldn't die from one of Yoo Jonghyuk's blows.

Shortly after that, we crossed Cheongdam Bridge and entered Gwangjin-gu.

I felt the surrounding ecology change little by little. Grass was growing on the streets and instead of rotting bodies, the smell of monster feces filled the area.

The trunk of a huge plant emerged from the ground and wrapped around the surrounding high-rise buildings.

[The 7th grade plant species 'Yanaspleta' is on the lookout.]

I spoke to Han Sooyoung who was pulling out a weapon. "Don't act so rashly. It is fine as long as we don't attack first."

"...Don't these type of monsters suddenly attack with tentacles?"

"That is just in the manhwas. They are gentle. Just be careful not to step on the roots."

At the top of the building, the head of the plant that resembled a sunflower followed after us with its eyes. It seemed scary but it was actually a good monster. This didn't mean that the situation was optimistic.

The plant species originally came after the Great Hall was fully opened.

“The terraforming has started.”

Terraforming.

The fifth scenario was world versus world. Humanity fought against the worlds that were coming.

Just like Seoul was suffering from the erosion of Chronos, China would be facing the ‘3rd Murim World’ while Japan would be facing the ‘White Demon World.’

Han Sooyoung scouted around with avatars and said.

“It is a monster colony. Damn.”

“The terraforming will be even faster if the disasters awaken.”

“What type of person is waking up the disaster?”

“A person like you. You woke up the fire dragon.”

Han Sooyoung bit her lips.

“...Didn’t you tidy it up?”

“At that time, the intermediate dokkaebi placed a penalty on the fire dragon. And what if I didn’t kill it? Don’t tell me that you would catch it?”

“There was a penalty? Then didn’t it benefit us to catch a weakened disaster?”

“The Disaster of Questions has no penalty. It is questionable if the dokkaebi would even place a penalty on it.”

We moved quickly to avoid the monster’s colony. In the streets, the ground rats and grolls were eating corpses.

Looking at the traces of the destroyed monsters, Yoo Jonghyuk seemed to have come through this path. Yoo Jonghyuk was great to walk so far in this physical condition.

I spoke to Yoo Jonghyuk.

*–I have a question.*

*–.....*

*–Why come to me? I honestly thought you would commit suicide.*

*–Suicide? How ridiculous.*

If he had seen his future in the 8th turn, he wouldn't be able to say this. I was a bit confused by his next words.

*–If I was going to give up so easily, I wouldn't have started this journey.*

It really felt like the first time I read Ways of Survival. I thought that maybe Han Sooyoung was right. The Yoo Jonghyuk I believed I knew was the Yoo Jonghyuk who easily gave up, easily killed people and repeatedly caused numerous tragedies.

However, the Yoo Jonghyuk of the third round wasn't yet like that. Maybe I didn't know the Yoo Jonghyuk of the third round.

[Your understanding of the character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' is increasing.]

In the meantime, Yoo Jonghyuk said.

*–I thought of you right away. I thought you would be a bit of help since you are the one who smashed the Absolute Throne.*

*–You aren't going to say anything about me breaking the throne?*

*–I don't want to talk about what already happened. In addition, I thought about it. You must've done it to rule out the 'god of the other world.'*

*–... You know?*

I was honestly frightened because I had never really spoken to Yoo Jonghyuk before.

Putting aside his coolness, this bastard had such a great mind?

Yoo Jonghyuk kept speaking.

*–Honestly, I think it isn't a bad way. The problem is what happens next. After you crushed the throne, the guides were scattered and there was a setback in collecting the meteorite. This is why the terraforming of Gwangjin-gu and Gangdong-gu is so fast. The wanderers are using the power of the meteorites.*

*–What do you mean? Terraforming won't accelerate simply by using the meteorites.*

*–One of the 10 Evils has taken possession of a 'disaster meteorite.'*

The 10 Evils. My heart instantly sank. I had expected it but actually hearing it was a different matter.

*–Is it the Poisoner?*

*–... You know.*

*–She is the only one who uses Thousand Spirits Poison.*

But there was still a part that I didn't understand.

*–Then why are you poisoned? If you knew that the opponent was the Poisoner, shouldn't you have avoided facing her from the front?*

*–I was trying to convince her.*

*–Convince? You?*

Then a scene belatedly popped up. Yoo Jonghyuk said.

*–I wanted to make her a companion.*

Companion... I see. I remembered now. Poisoner Lee Seolhwa was Yoo Jonghyuk's companion in the second round.

The 10 Evils weren't always opponents.

Just like Armed Fortress Master Gong Pildu changed in this round, Lee Seolhwa was transformed into a companion in several rounds, including the first regression. In all other regressions so far, Poisoner Lee Seolhwa was one of the few companions that Yoo Jonghyuk could rely on.



*–You did something that isn't like you.*

*–I admit it. I was pathetic.*

*–.....*

*–She isn't the person I remember. I knew it. Still, I wanted to believe for a moment that the woman in my memories was still alive. I wanted to be with her again.*

I couldn't help opening my mouth at the loneliness that he had buried deeply.

In his second life, Lee Seolhwa didn't last long but she was Yoo Jonghyuk's lover.

*–I understand.*

Yoo Jonghyuk was silent for a moment.

*–You are talking as if you have regressed before.*

*–I don't need to regress to understand.*

I knew that I shouldn't speak about understanding. Still, I wanted to say it. Since he wouldn't receive understanding from anyone in the future, I thought I could say this.

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' is deeply shaken.]

[The character 'Yoo Jonghyuk' has received a faint consolation.]

*–Strange. You obviously aren't a regressor... But I feel like you really understand these emotions. Is this also the power of a prophet?*

I didn't answer, making Yoo Jonghyuk continue speaking.

*–Of course, you aren't a good person. You are the unscrupulous person who kidnapped my sister.*

*–When did I kidnap her? I just protected her. You must've understood with Lie Detection...*

"Kim Dokja."

We stopped talking at Han Sooyoung's tense voice. The road from Cheonho Bridge to

Gangdong was visible. The Great Hall emitted a bright light and something fell towards Gangdong-gu.

Dammit, it was already happening.

We fully entered Gangdong-gu and the density of the strange grasses covering the ground increased. Dirty trees grew between buildings and there were small beasts running on the trees.

Gangdong-gu was already half of another world.

Han Sooyoung bit her lips and asked, “Are we too late? What if the disaster has already awakened?”

“It hasn’t happened yet. Then we would’ve received the scenario.”

We took a few more steps and saw several markings on the ground. It looked like graffiti but it was actually a territorial display.

It was a warning that no one should enter.

From here on, it was the area of the Poisoner. Like the other wanderers, she settled in Gangdong-gu and started to expand her base.

The progress was faster than I expected.

Han Sooyoung said, “If this group is well guarded, it won’t be easy to attack... Have you thought of something?”

No. I didn’t intend to wage an all-out war in the first place.

“We only need the meteorite. We can just steal it. I will buy time while you take the meteorite.”

However, it wouldn’t be so easy. The story might be different if I had an assistant like the Wanderer King.

Yoo Jonghyuk interrupted.

*–There is no need to rush. Even if the disaster begins, the Disaster of Questions is a*

*disaster that can be suppressed at an early stage.*

An early suppression. Indeed, it was possible for Yoo Jonghyuk.

*–Early suppression? Who will do that? Are you a half god?*

*–Of course it should be you. Weren't you thinking about it anyway?*

*–Why do you think that?*

*–You have already woken up the guide and received the Way of the Wind.*

Based on his tone, he was slightly angry that I had taken the Way of the Wind that he was supposed to learn. I said with a smile.

*-I didn't learn it.*

*-... Why? There wasn't enough time?*

*I'm actually glad.*

*–No, I don't have talent.*

I could feel Yoo Jonghyuk's deep contempt in his silence.

*–You, from the beginning...*

*“There are people.”*

The moment I heard Han Sooyoung's words, I raised Unbroken Faith. It was the territory of one of the 10 Evils so the people would naturally belong to their group.

I entrusted Yoo Jonghyuk to Han Sooyoung's avatar.

*“...I will be gone for a while so take him. Do you understand?”*

The people were getting closer. But something felt strange. Usually it wasn't so loud when a single group moved. Then the clear voice of a woman was heard in front of us.

*“Everybody run towards Cheonho Bridge!”*

It wasn't the Poisoner's group.

They weren't as powerful as the Wanderer King's group but some people who survived the Poisoner's Group were escaping from Gangdong-gu. The unarmed survivors gasped for air when they found us.

"O-Out of the way! Hurry!"

Terrible arrows came flying towards them. The man who spoke to me fell down after being hit by an arrow. The man's back quickly became discoloured and blackened. It was poison.

"Get those scum!"

The Poisoner's group. Dozens of men and women simultaneously fired arrows.

The moment we tried to avoid it by moving behind a building, threads of silk spread out in the air.

Dozens of webs were arranged at once, causing the arrows to become tangled in the thread and not go any further. Han Sooyoung's eyes widened.

"...What the hell is that technique?"

In fact, it was fired from behind the Poisoner's group. The thread was like steel wire. The sharpness of the thread caused the legs of people to fly through the air.

"Kuaaak!"

All the threads were connected to one woman. The woman wearing a tight black battle suit flew through the air. Two knives stretched out from the fingers of the woman brilliantly riding the thread of magic.

The woman freely manipulated the length of the thread and she swept away the Poisoner's group in an instant.

There wasn't any hesitation in her hand. The movements were beyond beautiful. The combination of stats and skills showed that she didn't have an ordinary sponsor.

[The information of this person can't be read in 'Character List.']

[This person isn't registered in 'Character List.']

She wasn't even on the Character List.

Han Sooyoung muttered. "Hey, that woman..."

I knew without her saying anything. It was because this woman was someone I knew.

"...Yoo Sangah-ssi?"

I hadn't met her in two days yet she was completely different from the girl I knew.

# Chapter 82

## SSS Grade Talent (2)

The bodies of her enemies were torn apart whenever Yoo Sangah's daggers moved.

Amazing.

...Was this really the Yoo Sangah that I knew?

There weren't many skills that could show such power against a large group. At the present time, it was probably just Armed Fortress Master Gong Pildu's Armed Zone and Han Sooyoung's Avatar. Yet Yoo Sangah was showing such power without such a great skill.

How did she become so strong? What was this talent?

Yoo Jonghyuk spoke as if he had read my thoughts.

*-She grew faster because you aren't around. You seem to have no aptitude for raising your fellow companions. It is the same with Lee Hyunsung.*

*-... They grew to this extent because I pushed them in the beginning.*

Actually, I didn't really believe it but I wanted to say it. Damn, why did she get stronger when I wasn't around? Why didn't I seem to be much help?

"Hey." A voice was heard. I nodded at Han Sooyoung's words. I couldn't be overwhelmed by Yoo Sangah forever. In any case, there were many enemies and Yoo Sangah was alone.

"Yoo Sangah-ssi, this way!"

Yoo Sangah stopped when she heard my words. She clearly hadn't expected to meet me in this place.

"Han Sooyoung, please."

Han Sooyoung triggered Avatar like she was waiting. Dozens of avatars disturbed the vision of the Poisoner's group and I safely made contact with Yoo Sangah.

"Dokja-ssi? How are you..."

"Let's talk after moving."

The group members were chasing from afar. Fortunately, the survivors seemed to have escaped safely through Gangdong Bridge. The problem was on our side.

*–Go back to the high-rise buildings. The most important step is to go up and secure visibility.*

As expected, Yoo Jonghyuk's judgment was valid. I might've read all of Ways of Survival but I couldn't make battlefield judgments like Yoo Jonghyuk. Then Yoo Jonghyuk followed with meaningful words.

*–And that woman, you should be careful of her.*

Be careful? Who? Yoo Jonghyuk didn't say anything else.

We quickly hid inside a nearby high-rise building. The monsters suddenly flooded the area, probably due to the turmoil, and just narrowly missed our tail. They soon gave up and returned to inner Gangdong.

I looked back at Yoo Sangah.

"Yoo Sangah-ssi, are you okay?"

"Yes, I'm fine. Dokja-ssi?"

"Yes, I'm also fine."

It had only been a few days but the conversation was awkward. It felt like I was meeting an alumni from high school 10 years after graduation. I looked away from her in her tight battle suit and opened her mouth.

"That, um..."

I couldn't figure out what to ask.

In the meantime, I looked at Han Sooyoung. Yoo Sangah saw Yoo Jonghyuk being carried on the back of Han Sooyoung's avatar and gave me an unknown smile.

"Dokja-ssi must've done a lot in the meantime."

It was time to listen to a short story.



After the Absolute Throne was smashed, Yoo Sangah fell to Gangdong-gu. Fortunately, there was someone who fell with her.

"Gong Pildu was with you?"

"Yes. Ahjussi helped me a lot."

Seeing that she was calling him ahjussi, they seemed to have become quite familiar with each other.

"Where is Gong Pildu?"

"Two days ago, he was injured while we were fighting the Gangdong-gu group. It was while trying to save me..."

Many surprising things kept happening today. '10 Evils' Gong Pildu risked himself in order to save someone else. Yoo Sangah bowed her head and spoke with difficulty.

"In the end, Ahjussi lured them to Han River..."

Yoo Sangah bit her lips and a poisonous expression filled her face. I suddenly realized why Yoo Sangah killed the Poisoner's group without hesitation.

I spoke to comfort her. "Gong Pildu is probably okay. Don't worry."

I had a contract with Defense Master so I would know immediately when Gong Pildu died. I would be penalized according to the terms of the contract. The fact that there was no reaction meant that Gong Pildu was alive somewhere.

Like the Poisoner, Gong Pildu was also part of the 10 Evils. It wasn't that easy for him to die.



“Where did you get those clothes and the dagger?”

“Ah, this...”

After separating from Gong Pildu, Yoo Sangah found the green meteorite. The green meteorite was a meteorite containing rare items. I checked the items she had. I remembered that there was a meteorite containing these items in the vicinity of Cheonho-dong.

[Ancient Assassin's Dagger]

[Rich Cat's Leather Suit]

Both were excellent S-grade items.

The Ancient Assassin's Dagger had the option of increasing damage to distant enemies while the Rich Cat's Leather Suit increased movement speed the longer the duration of the attack.

“They are great items.”

“Yes, I am able to fight well thanks to these items.”

Yoo Sangah smiled and then the quietly listening Han Sooyoung spoke up.

“Hrmm, are you sure that's all?”

“Huh?”

“Let's say that you ‘accidentally’ got the items. But it doesn't make such to have such combat skills with barely any items. Who the hell is your sponsor? How did you raise ‘Quick Movements’ or ‘Dagger Mastery’ so quickly? It is impossible for the growth to be so fast even with a growth package.”

“...Who are you?”

“Me? It am the 1st Apostle.”

Yoo Sangah raised her weapon without speaking. “Calm down Yoo Sangah-ssi. This person isn't an enemy.”

Yoo Sangah looked at me with disbelief. “Are you friends now?”

“We aren’t friends...”

“The Chungmuro group members died because of that person. Surely you haven’t forgotten?”

Yoo Sangah was the deputy of Chungmuro while I was absent.

Therefore, her affection towards the Chungmuro members would be much deeper than mine. Han Sooyoung said, “Chungmuro? Ah, I see. You are that woman?”

Yoo Sangah narrowed her eyes at the words.

Han Sooyoung smiled and added, “Hey, Kim Dokja. I am a bad person but I am also a good judge. She has a big sponsor behind her.”

“You...”

“When I saw her at Chungmuro, she wasn’t that strong. Isn’t it strange? She can’t grow so explosively in such a short period of time, even if she has a narrative grade sponsor. Maybe if she has a SSS grade accelerated growth skill... How can many constellations can provide such support to South Korea?”

My heart wanted to deny it but rationally, I knew that Han Sooyoung was right. There was also Yoo Jonghyuk’s words from a short while ago. In addition, Yoo Sangah had been hiding her sponsor from me.

Yoo Sangah’s troubled eyes met mine.

I used to think that Yoo Sangah’s sponsor was ‘Abandoned Lover of the Labyrinth’.

The only person who could find the path through the magic room was the person who handed the thread to Theseus in Daedalus’ Labyrinth, ‘Ariadne.’

But as Han Sooyoung said, it was impossible for her to grow to such a degree with Ariadne’s sponsorship.

In addition, the movements that she showed while moving through the air in the previous battle was closer to the Hermes Walking Method than Air Steps. Ariadne’s

incarnation couldn't use Hermes' stigma.

I was about to open my mouth when something unexpected happened.

[Haha, everyone! How have you been?]

Dammit... this timing. I immediately looked out the window. A new dokkaebi was floating in the sky.

[The participants in this scenario are quite hasty. There is still a week before the start of the scenario and people are already waking up a disaster. Are you curious about the next scenario?]

It wasn't the level of Bihyung's nonsense but it was still talking nonsense. Perhaps there was no one in charge so this low-grade dokkaebi took their place.

[The dokkaebi have left their positions so I will be here for this period... haha. Now have you all eaten your fill? You do know that this event can't be skipped, right?]

This wasn't good. It was a really bad development.

[I want to do that but I won't be a dokkaebi if I don't give scenarios.]

The fact that a scenario was appearing now told me one thing.

[The sub scenario – Disaster Prevention has arrived.]

It meant that the outbreak of a disaster was just around the corner.

+

[Sub Scenario – Disaster Prevention]

**Category:** Sub

**Difficulty:** S-

**Clear Conditions:** Unknown powers in Gangdong-gu are trying to hatch one of the disasters. Defeat them and stop the incoming 'disaster.'

**Time Limit:** 2 hours

**Compensation:** 22,000 coins

**Failure:** Early emergence of the Disaster of Questions.

+

Since we received the ‘Disaster Prevention’ scenario, the Poisoner’s group would’ve received the ‘Defend the Disaster’ scenario.

The damn dokkaebis were still trying to be part of this unforeseen situation. I looked at the party members and said, “It isn’t the time for us to fight. Now we have to handle this situation.”

Han Sooyoung and Yoo Sangah nodded at the same time.



The Poisoner’s group was based in Cheonho-gong of Gangdong-gu. To be exact, it was an area filled with churches and a cathedral.

If their purpose was to awaken the disaster early, it was a good choice to choose a religious area. The prayers of those who lost their places would create an environment suitable for hatching the ‘disaster.’

Han Sooyoung finished scouting and opened her mouth.

“The road with the lowest level of terraforming is in the northeast, centred on the base. It is 16 Cheonjung-ro. If we go this way, we can reach the base in the shortest time. But the defenses are formidable.”

I nodded. We didn’t have time so we had to go through the fastest way.

“It’s okay. We have to reach that building as quickly as possible. Han Sooyoung and Yoo Sangah-ssi will take the front. Don’t fight each other.”

“...I understand.”

Yoo Jonghyuk couldn’t help right now so I decided to leave him on the roof of the high-rise building with Han Sooyoung’s avatar. His role was to watch the battlefield. Yoo Jonghyuk didn’t express much dissatisfaction. He just gave this piece of advice.

*–If possible, get rid of them before the disaster hatches. Without Way of the Wind, the initial suppression of the Disaster of Questions is almost impossible.*

Of course, I wanted to do that if possible.

“Let’s go.”

The moment I gave the signal, we jumped down the building.

Han Sooyoung used Avatar and took the lead. Dozens of avatars jumped onto the road and attracted the attention of the Poisoner’s group.

“What? Kill them!”

As the confused group members chased after the avatars, thin and transparent thread filled the air.

“Kuaaak!”

The people chasing after the avatars were caught by sharp threads and their legs were cut off. This wasn’t the end. There was another strong thread in the location where the people fell.

Their heads were cut off and flew through the air.

It was a terrifying double trap designed by calculating the angle of the fall. Han Sooyoung clicked her tongue.

“She is brutal.”

“You aren’t someone who should be saying that.”

Apart from their feelings towards each other, the combination of the two was worth looking at. No, it was very useful.

Thanks to their help, I was able to dig into the centre of the base while avoiding their surveillance.

It wasn’t difficult to find the disaster meteorite. It was a huge meteorite over 8 metres high. It emitted an ominous aura and seemed to say ‘I am the disaster.’

Certainly, it felt like the fire dragon was no comparison. If I couldn’t stop this disaster, Seoul would surely be destroyed.

Then a woman appeared next to the meteorite. She had hair as white as snow. As I saw

the lips that were like red flowers on a snowy mountain, I could see Yoo Jonghyuk's taste.

The cold and glassy eyes stared at me and I felt a terrible spirit emerge from her body.

It made my skin crawl. It was an overwhelming feeling compared to Gong Pildu.

I see. Did she also receive the power of the disaster meteorite?

"...Who are you?" One of the 10 Evils, the Poisoner Lee Seolhwa asked.

# Chapter 83

## SSS Grade Talent (3)

There were three ways to wake up a disaster meteorite.

One was to let the meteorite hatch in line with the scenario. The second method was to draw out the power of the disaster meteorite in advance. The third and fastest way was to supply magic power to the disaster meteorite.

Dozens of Lee Seolhwa's group members were praying.

A faint magic power was flowing out of their bodies into the disaster meteorite.

The hatching ceremony. They had chosen the third method. Based on the meteorite's heavy shaking, the disaster would hatch in 30 minutes.

I looked at Lee Seolhwa and opened my mouth. "Won't you stop? Unless you want to die together."

"..."

"What are you thinking?"

It was strange.

In the third round of regression in the original, there was no one foolish enough to wake up the disaster, even if they did borrow the power of the disaster.

Yoo Jonghyuk must've visited Lee Seolhwa in advance because he knew about it.

"Stop hatching the disaster meteorite. Then I will spare you."

Lee Seolhwa looked at me quietly. "What if I don't want to?"

"You'll die here."

Poisoner Lee Seolhwa had an expression of ridicule on her face. Her hands moved and the humans praying towards the disaster turned towards me at the same time.

[The eighth grade outside species 'Lower Human Nam Minhyuk' has showed hostility towards you.]

[The eighth grade outside species 'Lower Human Jung Minji' has showed hostility towards you.]

[The eighth grade outside species 'Lower Human Kin Gapil' has showed hostility towards you.]

Antennae grew on their heads and their hands turned sharp like rakes. These wanderers seemed to become transformed humans rather than wolves. There was a worrisome point.

"...It is strange. Isn't transforming humans the power of the disaster meteorite?"

I murmured at the same time that Lee Seolhwa shouted, "Die!"

The loyalists leaped into their air, their wings spreading out. I aimed the hilt towards them.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

[The special option of Unbroken Faith is activated.]

[The ether property is converted to 'fire.']

White flames split apart the air. All species with insect properties were weak to 'fire.' The ether flames of Unbroken Faith spread to the skin of the lower humans.

One to two, two to three.

"Kieeeeek!"

The flames burned the skin of the lower humans. I cut off the legs and wings of the lower humans.

"Kiiit!"

Magic power gushed out and burned the lower humans in a flash. It was the same in the case of the werewolves. They walked a path other than human and I didn't receive a penalty from killing them. I broke through the flames and ran towards Lee Seolhwa.



For the first time, Unbroken Faith was blocked. Lee Seolhwa's fingernails and forearms were tinged with a dark light.

The power of the disaster increase the level of the stigmas. By borrowing the power of the disaster, her Poisonous Nails could block the Blade of Faith. However, that didn't mean she could prevent all damage.

"Kuuack!"

Sparks flew and Lee Seolhwa's body was pushed back a few steps. It would be strange if this didn't happen.

My current overall stats were the highest among all incarnations apart from Yoo Jonghyuk. I might have no talent but I wasn't weak among the incarnations.

"Give up. It won't be good for you if the disaster hatches now. Doesn't this sub scenario have no penalty for failure?"

Lee Seolhwa looked towards the disaster meteorite nervously. There was a change in the atmosphere.

It felt like she was aiming at the 'disaster' rather than power from the disaster meteorite.

It was strange. Even a person who didn't read the original novel would expect Seoul to be destroyed when a disaster hatched. Then why did she want to wake up the disaster?

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Lee Seolhwa

**Age:** 26 years old

**Constellation Support:** Guam Divine Doctor (Guam =pen name of Heo Jun, court physician who wrote Dongui Bogam, a medical text that showed up in a previous chapter)

**Private Attribute:** Competent Physician (Rare) Master of Poison (Rare)

**Exclusive Skills:** Weapons Training Lv. 7, Love Affair Demon Lv. 4, Emit Deadly Poison Lv. 5, New Poison Preparation Lv. 4, Counteract Poison Lv. 5...

**Stigma:** Deadly Poison Lv. 4, Thousand Spirits Poison Lv. 4, Crossroad of Life and

Death Lv. 3

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 44 (+10), Strength Lv. 42 (+10), Agility Lv. 44 (+10), Magic Power Lv. 35 (+10).

**Overall Evaluation:** The current comprehensive evaluation is currently in progress.

\* This character is currently infected with a 'parasite.'

\* The parasite is controlling the body of the character.

\* Some of parasite Antinus' stats will be transferred to the character.

+

...Damn. I didn't think her condition would be like this.

[Due to the effect of your exclusive attribute, the memory effect of some scenes have increased.]

In my head, pages flipped and the sentences of some pages flowed over my retinas.

{There are five dominant species in the world of Chronos. The Velkia in the east, the Parasites in the west, the Imyuntar in the south and the Mistilen in the north. Finally, the Inba in the centre.}

I avoided the poisonous attack and kicked her back, causing her to lose her balance. Lee Seolhwa rolled around the ground and groaned. I watched Lee Seolhwa and opened my mouth.

"The fifth scenario is a scenario where the 'Disasters of Chronos' was made into a motif."

Lee Seolhwa's eyes shook as she heard 'Disasters of Chronos.'

"On the day that Chronos was destroyed, the five dominant species of Chronos elected one hero from each species. The five chosen heroes shamefully survived the destruction and carried on Chronos' path."

"..."

"They were sent to another through through a contract with the Star Stream. They came to that world, encountered other species and promised their lives in exchange for stopping the disaster there."

A non-human cry emerged from Lee Seolhwa's mouth at the story.

“They were called guides.”

“...*Kit*. How does a human of Earth know such things?”

How did I know? I knew because I saw it in a book.

“You aren’t Lee Seolhwa.”

The disasters were hatching faster than the original. There were no ‘humans’ who would do such a thing.

“Parasite Queen Antinus. Why is a guide trying to wake up the disaster?”

Only a ‘fallen guide’ would dream of such a thing.

[The 5th grade Parasite Antinus is looking at you.]

Parasites were a parasitic species that lived through other species. Now Lee Seolhwa was being manipulated by one of the guides.

I looked at the dead bodies of the lower humans.

Just like with Lycaon’s meteorite, it wasn’t the power of the disaster but the power of Chronos’ guide that promoted the human transformation.

“Why are you infecting the humans here? Why are you doing this?”

*Kiiik...*

“What do you get for waking up the disaster early? Isn’t the purpose of the guides to prevent the disaster along with the people of this world and unite with us to build a new world? Why are you trying to destroy the terraformed world?”

*Kikik, kikikik...!*

“This is an act that violates your mission! It isn’t too late so get out of her body right now. Do the right thing, Guide Antinus!”

If possible, I didn’t want to kill Lee Seolhwa. Maybe Yoo Jonghyuk would do the same.

The Poisoner became one of the Ten Evils after being infected by the Parasite. Lee Seolhwa might not be one of the 10 Evils if the infection was removed.

It was why Yoo Jonghyuk's conversation didn't work. He tried to protect his old lover from the Parasite Queen.

The messages of the Midday Tryst blinked in the air.

*–Kill her.*

It was Yoo Jonghyuk.

*–The important thing isn't her life but the survival of this world. Act wisely, Kim Dokja.*

Due to the far distance, I couldn't see what Yoo Jonghyuk's expression was like.

He had to worry about this world rather than the woman to whom he once gave his affection. Maybe this was the nature of a hero.

I said.

*–Then you will be unhappy.*

*–It doesn't matter.*

Yoo Jonghyuk's voice was steady and firm. But I knew. If Lee Seolhwa died here, Yoo Jonghyuk would someday collapse.

*Kiiit!*

The deaths of his acquaintances would pile up, gnawing at Yoo Jonghyuk's memories and making his mind weary.

*“Kit! You are just a human!”*

The Parasite Queen spoke through Lee Seolhwa's mouth. Hatred for humans was ingrained in her tone.

In fact, I knew why she hated humans so much. However, the situation wasn't relaxed enough for me to think about her feelings.

*“Kit. Die.”*

Black liquid started to flow from Lee Seolhwa’s body. The Thousand Spirits Poison. This was when Lee Seolhwa’s talent started to be shown off. Black liquid shot from her fingernails towards me.

I took a few steps back while the Thousand Spirits Poison melted the ground. If Yoo Jonghyuk was an ordinary incarnation, he would’ve already become like this ground. Yoo Jonghyuk asked.

*–Do you have a countermeasure to the Thousand Spirits Poison?*

*–I do.*

I also wasn’t an ordinary person. Strictly speaking, I wasn’t an incarnation. Lee Seolhwa’s poison spread through the air towards me.

It felt like it had its own will as the poison freely moved through the air and found my weakness. A few drops splashed on my thighs and then my forearms. A part of the suit hit by Thousand Spirits Poison started to melt.

A satisfied smile appeared on Lee Seolhwa’s face. However, this was an early judgment.

I ran through the poison and punched her hard in the belly, throwing her back.

*“Kiiiiiet!”*

She flew through the air with a terrible cry.

My skin touched by the Thousand Spirits Poison showed some discolouration but it soon returned to its original colour. Lee Seolhwa was upset.

*“...Kik, the Thousand Poisons Resistance?”*

Horror was in her eyes. Thousand Poisons Resistance was the terror of all beings who used poison. However, I didn’t have Thousand Poisons Resistance or Immunity to Ten Thousand Poisons.

“Antinus, you don’t know the sponsor behind your host?” I put my hand in my pocket. “That’s why you don’t know. You don’t know but I’m sure its inside that body. Right?”

After a while, a book appeared in my hands.

[A constellation worried about the degradation of Oriental medicine has revealed his own modifier.]

[The constellation 'Guam Divine Doctor' looks at you with amazement.]

*"Kiiit...?"*

[Dongui Bogam- Unfinished Book]

It was one of the greatest Oriental medicine records of the East. The Dongui Bogam was an item that appeared in the five person dungeon during the King's Qualifications.

"I had a hard time collecting this."

During the King's Qualifications scenario, all the kings were frantically trying to get the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword.

While the kings coveted the Four Yin Demonic Beheading Sword, I picked up other items. Many items were thrown away because they didn't know their value. Among them, I was interested in the Dongui Bogam.

Internal Medicine – 4th part.

External Medicine – 4th part.

Various Diseases – 11th part.

Remedies – 3rd part.

Acupuncture – 1st part.

Table of Contents – 2nd part.

It was a star relic that could be completed after 25 parts were collected.

Unfortunately, I only collected eight pieces but that alone was enough to see an effect. Even if I only collected eight parts, the Dongui Bogam had the effect of the S grade Immunity to Poison Bead.

[The effect of the Dongui Bogam – Incomplete has been activated.]

[Your body has temporarily gained the Poison Resistance ability.]

The baffled Lee Seolhwa shouted.

“How? The Thousand Spirits Poison...!”

“I know. Thousand Spirits Poison is a poison that can’t be counteracted with ordinary poison resistance. But it is possible for the Dongui Bogam. Why do you think that is?”

[The constellation ‘Guam Divine Doctor’ is smiling faintly.]

One constellation faintly glowed as if in response.

“It is because the constellation who made the Thousand Spirits Poison is the author of Dongui Bogam.”

# Chapter 84

## SSS Grade Talent (4)

{The greatest good person can turn into the worst killer at any time.}

This was a sentence that described Guam Divine Doctor in Ways of Survival.

Guam Divine Doctor Heo Jun.

According to the records in Ways of Survival, the task that Heo Jun devoted his last years to wasn't medicine but poison. Like many great people who later became constellations, Heo Jun reached a level beyond the actual history records.

{“If I make a poison that can kill anyone, I can make a pill that can save anyone.”}

Heo Jun was banished after the death of King Seonjo and devoted his last seven years to this question.

Why was poison a medicine for some people and a poison for others? One day in his last years, he finally reached a mystical answer.

{“It isn't the body but the spirit that determines the action of the poison.”}

A poison made by analyzing a thousand souls. The result was the heavenly poison that flowed out of Lee Seolhwa's body, the Thousand Spirits Poison.

Dongui Bogam was actually written from Heo Jun's failure to reach Thousand Spirits Poison.

*“Kiik, kiiik!”*

I moved through the Thousand Spirits Poison and dealt a merciless blow to Lee Seolhwa.

Lee Seolhwa flew through the air. It wasn't hard to defeat Lee Seolhwa if her poison was disabled.



It was the Thousand Spirits Poison that solidified her reputation as one of the Ten Evils. If I hadn't got the Dongui Bogam, I would've become a sacrifice of her reputation...

This time her luck was bad.

[The constellation 'Guam Divine Doctor' is looking at you like he is sorry.]

[The constellation 'Guam Divine Doctor' is looking forward to you dealing with this properly.]

[300 coins have been sponsored.]

The 'Parasite' infection was irrelevant to Guam Divine Doctor's intentions. In other words, Lee Seolhwa's attack on me wasn't according to Lee Seolhwa's will.

By the way, only sponsoring 300 coins...

[The constellation 'Seo Ae Il Pil' is looking forward to you dealing with this properly.]

[The constellation 'Bald General of Justice' expects you to do your best.]

[300 coins have been sponsored.]

I ignored the response of the constellations and approached Lee Seolhwa. Lee Seolhwa crawled across the ground with fear.

I could feel Yoo Jonghyuk's gaze in the distance. Yoo Jonghyuk would probably be hurt badly if Lee Seolhwa died here.

I looked at the fallen Lee Seolhwa and opened my mouth. "Hey."

To be exact, I spoke to Parasite Antinus inside her.

"It would be good if you come out."

"Kik?"

"It isn't too late now. Return to your duties as a guide. Teach people skills and get along with them."

"..."

"If you work hard, maybe you can become a constellation one day?"

The Parasite Queen, Antinus was a strong hero.

It wasn't possible for her to exert all her strength because she was restricted by the probabilities. It wasn't impossible for her to become a constellation if she continued to be a 'guide' and accumulated history.

"You humans... I hate..."

The problem was that she thought of humans as enemies. It was also a mortal enemy. I glanced at the disaster meteorite that was intermittently shaking.

"I am sorry that your world was destroyed. But is it necessary to destroy this world? Are you going to reproduce the same tragedy here?"

"...All of you will die."

I watched the smiling Antinus and sighed. If she didn't go out on her own, I would have to force her out.

In fact, I didn't want to use this method. It wasn't just due to the pain Lee Seolhwa would go to. I didn't want the burden of dealing with Antinus after she left the body.

I glanced up at the sky. The constellations of the Korean peninsula. I owed them a debt last time so this time I had to make a concession.

[The special option of Dongui Bogam – Incomplete has been activated.]

[Dongui Bogam – Incomplete has conveyed the essence of Oriental medicine to you.]

I had an incomplete version of Dongui Bogam so I couldn't do miracles like making a powerful poison or saving a dying person. However, I could do simple treatments.

For example, taking a parasite out of a body.

Her body had to be bound for a smooth treatment, so I held Lee Seolhwa's arms from behind, holding her to the ground. It was a misleading position but her consciousness was buried deep inside her.

Common sense told me not to go after Yoo Jonghyuk's ex-girlfriend unless I was a madman. Especially in front of Yoo Jonghyuk's eyes.

[The exclusive skill 'Hit a Pressure Point Lv. 2' is activated.]

I started to press at different pressure points on Lee Seolhwa's body.

Soon after, her skin turned red and I planted a needle made of magic power into her reacting blood. It was my first time doing this so I didn't know if it would work.

*"Kiiit! It hurts! It huuuuurts!"*

Lee Seolhwa howled loudly. I ignored her and kept pressing the pressure points.

*"Kiiit! Kihit! Kyaaaak...!"*

Then Lee Seolhwa's screams gradually changed. It changed from the cry of an insect to a human voice.

The mysterious thing was using Oriental medicine to remove a parasite from the body. I was embarrassed that a person who had relied on Western medicine so far was now practicing Eastern medicine.

[The essence of Oriental medicine is effective!]

[The constellation 'Guam Divine Doctor' is looking at you with a warm expression.]

I got up while Lee Seolhwa gasped for breath.

Yellow mucus was flowing from the glands in her body where poison had been secreted. The mucus was the main body of a Parasite.

*"K... Kuock..."*

This would've satisfied the constellations.

[The constellation 'Guam Divine Doctor' thanks you for your good deed.]

[500 coins have been sponsored.]

Lee Seolhwa's eyes slowly opened. Consciousness had returned to her eyes but there was still no focus.

It was because she had been infected with a Parasite not long ago. She wouldn't be able to see my face right now with her five senses half dead.

“You... who are you?”

I was well aware of the events that would happen if I answered this question. A similar thing happened when Yoo Jonghyuk saved Lee Seolhwa in other rounds. That’s why the important thing wasn’t my identity.

“I was sent by Yoo Jonghyuk.”

*–Kim Dokja. Don’t do anything unnecessary.*

Yoo Jonghyuk’s angry voice pierced my ears. Lee Seolhwa’s expression changed.

“...Yoo Jonghyuk? Who is that?”

“You will soon find out.”

Poisoner Lee Seolhwa had to become part of Yoo Jonghyuk’s group.

After the prophets appeared and the Absolute Throne broke, the flow of this world was slowly changing from what I knew.

It was difficult to make the mistakes of the original but it was also hard to see the future that I didn’t know.

That’s why it was necessary to balance the important events directly. Some things flowed the same while others flowed differently.

There were twists and turns but in any case, I thought that this ‘round’ was approaching the ideal approximation that I was thinking of. And the Poisoner... No, Immortal Doctor Lee Seolhwa could be one of the greatest set points of this approximation.

“Kim Dokja, this side is done!”

I turned around and saw Han Sooyoung and Yoo Sangah approaching this way. Amazing. The two of them swept up that many people?

It might be a situation where the Poisoner was missing but they were still the ‘Poisoner’s Group’...

The original plan became meaningless. The two of them might be comparable to Lee Jihye's Ghost Fleet and Gong Pildu's Armed Zone.

"Wait, don't come over here."

I had to restrain their movements. It was difficult if they didn't have immunity to being infected. This fight hadn't ended yet.

*Kiiiit... human...!*

The mucus that escaped from Lee Seolhwa's body gathered in a ball at one point in the air.

Parasite Queen Antinus. She was scary in parasitic mode but even scarier when she didn't have a host.

The mucus moved like a small bug and formed a shape. It was a body made of nutrients that had been absorbed for many years. It was a body with beautiful curves and solid muscles.

She had dragonfly-like wings and a tail that resembled a scorpion. She was covered in an insect's shell apart from the face, but she looked more like a bipedal creature than an insect.

The real battle started now.

"Get away before you are infected!"

The sharp tail aimed for my stomach.

[The effect of the Dongui Bogam – Incomplete has been activated.]

[Your body is immune from a parasitic infection.]

It was so fast I couldn't avoid it despite having over 50 agility. I narrowly caught the tail before it pierced me. But if it hit, I would've definitely got a hole in my stomach.

*Kik.*

She used the fact that I was holding her tail to fly towards me and hit me. I was knocked onto the ground and a strong pain filled my body.

Strong. She became even stronger when she wasn't in a host. The power of her main body was comparable to a 5th grade insect king species.

Once Antinus unleashed her fighting power, it was equivalent to the degraded fire dragon I once killed.

It might be destroyed but she was still the hero of her world. She was as strong as Lycaon who emerged from the yellow meteorite.

This didn't mean I had no chance.

It was a clear violation of the scenario rules for the 'guide' to cause such an uproar before the fifth scenario ended. It wasn't just killing a few people. She even tried to hatch a disaster, which meant she had given up on her probability.

The sign of a probability storm was already descending on Antinus' body.

As time passed, the collapse of her body would accelerate, even if I didn't attack. It was a fight I could win if I just bought time.

*Kiiiiit!*

The problem was how much time I could buy before dying. At this moment, the Protection Symbol of the Imyuntar started shaking.

Ah, that's right. There was this. I held my aching body and said to her, "I'm sorry but I'm not your opponent."

As I spoke, a flash of silver light crossed the sky, causing a sonic boom. The gorgeous mane scattered in the air as something landed in front of me with a loud roar. The being was over three metres tall.

Lycaon, Prince of the Imyuntar, stood up.

"I'm sorry for the delay, Protector."

# Chapter 85

## SSS Grade Talent (5)

Prince Lycaon of the Imyuntar paid respect to me before immediately turning to look at Antinus.

I couldn't feel reassured because the other world species were companions.

"Antinus."

"Lycaon..."

"What the hell is this?"

The queen of the Parasites just laughed.

"Have you forgotten your mission? Why are you fighting the humans of this world?"

"*Kikik*, mission? Was there something like that?"

Lycaon's expression became determined at her teasing tone. "We are the 'guides.' We have to tell the people of the other worlds the right way to face the disasters that are coming."

"You have already been spellbound by the dokkaebis. Wake up Lycaon."

"You are the one who needs to wake up Antinus!" Lycaon's voice was furious. "Have you forgotten the sacrifice of the Chronos warriors? Have you already forgotten the moment when the five ruling species was destroyed? We are here to stop the disasters. Work with the species here to defend the terraformed planet and rebuild Chronos' civilization in this world! It is our sacred mission!"

Rebuilding Chronos' civilization. Antinus no longer laughed. "Lycaon, it is impossible. This planet will perish. It is the fate of the scenario."

"No, this time will be different." Lycaon glanced at me. "The Protector has stopped a

disaster before all the disasters woke up. He has the medallion of my people as proof. Perhaps there is a way to prevent the destruction.”

“If it was a deteriorated disaster, we could’ve stopped it at any time.”

“Earth is now only in the fifth scenario! There is no planet that has stopped a disaster before the fifth scenario began. Think about it Antinus! There is still hope for this planet!”

Antinus’ compound eyes slowly blinked. The cry of an insect was boiling inside her. Her cry was full of anger.

“Don’t be so arrogant. You came here to stop the disaster? If you really wanted to help them, why didn’t you start when the disaster’s destination was set to ‘Earth?’”

“That...”

Han Sooyoung quietly approached me while listening to their story. “These guys, what are they saying now?”

Han Sooyoung didn’t know the details of this scenario. The guides didn’t have such an in-depth conversation in the original third and fourth regression. Now they were talking about something vague.

Antinus continued speaking. “Lycaon! You are like me. We came to this planet for revenge! We will return the same disaster to those who brought us the disaster!”

“If you do that, you will die. The probability of the Star Stream won’t forgive the ‘guide’ for going against it.

Antinus laughed. “Lycaon, I died with my kind on Chronos.”

“...It doesn’t make sense.” Lycaon exposed his fangs. “Antinus. The conversation ends here.”

“Kikikik! Lycaon! Poor wolf of the Imyuntar! Have you forgotten the history of Chronos? The wolf has never once won against the insects!”

The battle between the prince of the wolves and queen of the parasites began.



*Grrrrr!*

Lycaon roared. The flow of ambient air was different. Some winds were fast while some winds were slow. Sometimes there was no wind and sometimes it was strong wind.

“I’m not the Imyuntar you knew!”

The winds in the surrounding area started to press on Antinus. Lycaon was finally showing his Way of the Wind that had evolved one step.

“*Kiiit...* interesting! I’ll check to see how your ‘way’ has grown!”

Antinus was the first one to move. The air barrier created by Way of the Wind and Antinus’ tail hit each other. Sparks filled the air and the sound of leather tearing was heard.

Han Sooyoung and I looked up at the sky, spellbound for a moment. This was the fight between fifth grade species. It was the confrontation of those who showed a superior physique to humans.

Antinus quickly made her way through the gaps in the atmosphere and arrived in front of Lycaon. Antinus’ tail underwent an external transformation into a wedge and rushed to Lycaon.

It was only one attack but it could mean the difference between defeat and victory. But at this moment, Antinus’ movements slowed down. It was like a repulsion force was pushing at her tail.

*Kihit?*

On the other hand, Lycaon’s movements were slightly faster. His attacks suddenly accelerated. Antinus’ tail struck empty air.

[The 5th grade species Parasite Antinus has activated Accelerating Wings Lv. 8.]

Antinus’ wings spread open and vibrated before she disappeared.

The S-grade movement skill, Accelerating Wings.

Her wings flapped thousands of times per second and she instantly appeared in front of Lycaon, as if she had teleported. Antinus' arms turned to scythes and flew towards Lycaon's back.

[The 5th grade species Parasite Antinus has activated Praying Mantis Breakthrough Lv. 8.]

The accelerated scythes struck the atmosphere wall, causing a terrible burst of noise. It was so fast that it seemed like even Lycaon couldn't avoid it.

Even so, Lycaon evaded. At the decisive moment, Antinus' attack slowed down while Lycaon's movements accelerated. It was the difference between life and death. Antinus' compound eyes blinked with surprise.

Yoo Sangah asked with surprise, "What type of technique is that. Instant Acceleration?"

"No, that is the Way of the Wind."

The secret technique of the Imyuntar, Way of the Wind.

At first glance, the two of them seemed to change speed but this was actually Lycaon's ability. The surrounding atmosphere flowed according to Lycaon's will.

"*Kit*, this damn wind...!"

Antinus also noticed. There was wind on the path that she moved. Antinus was caught in the wind and Lycaon used the wind.

It was a skill that controlled the movements of Accelerating Wings while avoiding Antinus's Praying Mantis Breakthrough. The roads made of wind could be used for evasion or to attack.

This was why I needed this skill. If I learnt Way of the Wind, I could replace the necessary skills with that one skill. Lycaon roared.

"Queen of Insects! Kneel in front of the wind!"

The wolves of the wind. The sharp claws of the wind tore at her wings, while a gale like kick hit her abdomen. His blow was filled with the wind's acceleration and struck the upper part of Antinus' shell.

“Kyaaaack...!”

Antinus’ lost half of her wings and she fell down. Perhaps if it wasn’t for the enlightenment I gave him, Lycaon wouldn’t have been able to defeat Antinus now.

I thought it was only good for others but it turned out to be helpful for me. The sign of a probability storm on Antinus’ body became stronger.

“*Kiiit!* It won’t end like this.”

Antinus attempted a landing with half her wings.

–*Kim Dokja! Kill her! Quickly!*

I was already running towards Antinus when I heard Yoo Jonghyuk’s voice.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

It was possible to be caught up in her probability storm but that wasn’t important right now.

“My world, my race, my children!” She was heading in the direction of the disaster meteorite. “The cost of destroying my world, I will absolutely make you pay it!”

She shot all her magic power towards the disaster meteorite.

Lycaon ran to block the magic power while I swung the fire property Blade of Faith towards Antinus’ neck.

The insect’s mouth became a smile of ridicule. Was it blocked? I turned my head and saw Lycaon’s pale face.

“*Grrr...* Protector, sorry...”

Then all sound disappeared.

Light burst from the disaster meteorite and a huge explosion struck me. One of the fragments of the exploded meteorite struck my head. The world shook. Lycaon flew away from the explosion.

The 'guide' couldn't withstand the force of this disaster. It was impossible to rewrite the history of 'defeat.'

The balance of the world was collapsing.

[You have failed to clear the scenario.]

[The 'Disaster of Questions' has come to your world.]

My vision darkened and I was buried under a pile of shattered building fragments. I barely came to my senses when Yoo Jonghyuk's voice rang in my ears.

*–Kim Dokja! Wake up! Hurry!*

*–... Recover your spirit.*

*–Get moving! Now you can still stop the disaster!*

I honestly thought it was too much. I didn't have Way of the Wind and the Disaster of Questions had hatched. It was better to consider a different route than to carry out a suicide attack.

Yoo Jonghyuk opened his mouth like he read my mind.

*–You, are you that weak?*

*–What?*

*–All the words you told me were false.*

I reflexively raised my body. This bastard...

*–The one who told me not to give up on this world will succumb to a disaster of this degree?*

Laughter emerged. I had to hear this from Yoo Jonghyuk, not anyone else. Suicide wasn't enough to get rid of the shame.

*–Of course not. I was just thinking for a second.*

The damn Yoo Jonghyuk was right. It was too early for me to say that was 'impossible.'

I emerged from the pile of building fragments. The eight metre tall disaster meteorite had split in two. It was obvious that something had hatched from it.

I looked around quickly but couldn't see the disaster.

"Hey, this is..." Han Sooyoung approached me with a restless expression.

I couldn't see Yoo Sangah. Then I heard a voice.

"This place..."

There was a boy around a dozen steps away. He looked like a high school student. He was completely naked without a stitch of clothing. The boy muttered.

"This is... perhaps?"

The boy stretched and looked around like he couldn't believe it. I listened to his murmurs and thought that I had to kill him right now.

However, my body couldn't move.

[An early hatching has weakened the Disaster of Questions.]

[Due to the early hatching penalty, you won't be able to attack the Disaster of Questions for three minutes.]

Dammit...

We were the ones being penalized? That dokkaebi scum, what was he doing?

The boy walked around the area and arrived in front of a woman nearby. It was a woman who was part of the Poisoner's group.

The boy shouted in a clear voice towards the woman. "Woman! Hey, are you okay?"

"U-Uh... who..."

"Excuse me, can I ask you something?"

No. She shouldn't answer that question. I wanted to shout but my voice didn't come out.

“Where is this place? What year is it now?”

“W-Why all of a sudden...”

“Are you asking me a question back?”

The boy’s strange tone seemed to bewitch the woman.

“T-This is Seoul and... the current year...”

A system message was heard the moment the woman answered.

[The first question has been resolved.]

[The first seal of the returnee ‘Myung Ilsang’ has been released.]

“Ha, haha... Hahaha!”

“W-What is that...?”

The boy laughed wildly at the confused woman and asked, “Do you know how much I suffered? Do you know?”

“H-Huh?”

“Have you lived for 100 years? In a place where I was the only human... Do you know that there are other dimensions?”

“Other... dimension?”

“Disgusting insects, werewolves and bird people... I have a problem. Can you guess what it is?”

The confused woman shut her mouth. The boy asked, “Insects, wolves, birds. Which of these three races are the best?”

“What... the best?”

Once the woman asked, the boy laughed like he was dying with joy. It was a creepy laugh.

“Then... who among the three has the most delicious meat?”

I listened to the Disaster of Questions and thought. Yes, it might be natural that Antinus wanted to destroy Earth. It was because a ‘human’ of Earth destroyed her world.

The woman didn’t answer the boy’s question.

“P-Please, spare me...”

There was a sound and the woman’s head flew away. The boy chuckled and looked around.

“Now, there is this development. What, a S-grade incarnation? Those scum are squeezing this kid. It is also a heavy duty alliance. No wait, before that...”

[The early hatching penalty has ended.]

[The power that controlled your movements has disappeared.]

Shit. It was too late. I was about to yell when the boy disappeared and moved to a remote location. Unfortunately, it was a place where another woman was standing.

“Haha! Noona is pretty! Yes?”

I cursed.

*–Yoo Sangah, avoid him!*

Yoo Sangah raised her dagger and asked cautiously, “...Who are you?”

The boy grinned at the question.

“Are you curious?”

The boy’s hand grabbed Yoo Sangah’s chin at a speed that couldn’t be seen.

“Should I tell you?”

One of the five disasters that destroyed Chronos, the Disaster of Questions. He was a ‘returnee’ of Earth transferred back to this world.

# Chapter 86

## SSS Grade Talent (6)

Returnee. This was the first statement that mentioned them in Ways of Survival:

{Some people go back in time, others go to another dimension and some are born again. In the end, the way to adapt to destruction varies from person to person.}

The second 'method' of 'How to Survive in a Ruined World.' To survive, destroy other dimensions and return.

"Answer me. Are you curious about my identity?"

Returnee Myung Ilsang. This boy was a returnee from Earth who was summoned to be a warrior in the world of Chronos.

"Hmm... isn't it normal to blush and lower your eyes in this situation? Noona is looking straight at me?"

The Disaster of Questions was such a bastard.

Yoo Sangah opened her mouth. "What..."

*–Yoo Sangah-ssi, don't answer the question!*

Yoo Sangah's head turned towards me at my words. However, her chin was caught by Myung Ilsang and forced her to look back.

"Where are you looking? Look at me. Is that your boyfriend?"

"Remove your hand."

Yoo Sangah shook off Myung Ilsang's hand. Her dagger moved in a threatening manner through the air. Myung Ilsang laughed.

[The second question has been resolved.]



[The second seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

"Ah, that's right. I've had a baby-face for 100 years."

The boy's cold eyes turned towards me. I didn't use Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint but it was clear even without the skill.

"You were having fun in this peaceful world?"

His right arm aimed at me. At the same time, purple particles condensed around his hand.

[The character 'Myung Ilsang' has triggered 'Small Black Fire Cannon']

Black Fire Cannon. This was the fire of death that destroyed the eastern part of Chronos and burned all the insect kings in the forest.

The whole atmosphere was burning and I was surrounded by flames. Pain spread across my skin. I cursed inside my heart. Damn! It hurt. It really hurt. It hurt...

...Less than I thought?

After a while, the flames turned off and I looked at my skin. Every inch was scorched and painful, but it was a bearable pain.

This was the black fire cannon that drove the insect kings to fear? However, the Small Black Fire Cannon... it didn't hurt?

I looked up and saw Yoo Sangah wielding her dagger. Unexpectedly, she had the advantage. Even the Disaster of Questions was perplexed by the overwhelming attacks.

"...What? Why are you so strong? Is Noona also a returnee? Or am I weak?"

I didn't understand. The original Disaster of Questions with two seals released should be stronger than this.

[The exclusive skill, Character List is activated.]

+

### [Character Information]

**Name:** Myung Ilsang

**Age:** 17 years old (127 years old)

**Constellation Support:** Mass Production Maker

**Private Attribute:** SSS-grade Warrior (Hero), Disaster of Questions (Legend)

**Exclusive Skills:** SSS-grade Growth Acceleration Lv. 10 (Currently Lv. 1), SSS-grade Swordsmanship Lv. 10 (Currently Lv. 1), Black Fire Cannon Lv. 9 ((Currently Lv. 1), SSS-grade Footwork Lv. 10 (Currently Lv. 1)...

**Stigma:** The Answer is Fixed and You just Need to Answer Lv. 7 (Lv. 2).

**Overall Stats:** Physique Lv. 99 (Currently Lv. 55), Strength Lv. 99 (Currently Lv. 55), Agility Lv. 99 (Currently Lv. 60), Magic Power Lv. 99 (Currently Lv. 55)

**Overall Evaluation:** The Disaster of Questions that destroyed Chronos. All stats are sealed due to the current scenario penalty. Every time a seal is released, the stats will rise. Once all seals are released, the real power of the disaster will awaken. If you want to survive, don't answer his questions. But you are still going to die.

+

I was nervous about the constant 'SSS' filling the screen but once I read it in detail, I understood why he was weak.

The dokkaebis were fair. Right now, he was weaker than the original disaster.

"Han Sooyoung! Yoo Sangah-ssi!" I didn't know if Bihyung was using his strength but now we had a chance. "Attack with all your strength! We must kill him now!"

If this was his current state, perhaps we could win without Way of the Wind. I poured my remaining coins into my stats.

[Physique Lv. 50 -> Physique Lv. 60]

[Agility Lv. 50 -> Agility Lv. 60]

[Magic Power Lv. 25 -> Magic Power Lv. 60]

[39,500 coins have been consumed.]

[All stats have reached the scenario limit.]

I ran aggressively while activation Unbroken Faith.

"Remember! You should never answer his questions!"

Myung Ilsang seemed interested when he saw my Blade of Faith. “What? An energy sword?”

My attack missed by a hair’s breath due to his high agility.

Myung Ilsang kept chattering. “Ahjussi, are you a martial artist? How can you use the energy sword already? Isn’t this crazy?”

I ignored him and triggered a stigma.

[The stigma ‘Song of the Sword’ has been used.]

[Your sword is filled with the words left by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.]

A random verse of Duke of Loyalty and Warfare’s story appeared in front of me, followed by a message.

{The 28th day. Clear skies. I went to do official business.}

Then nothing happened. Dammit, the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare didn’t help me at this time.

The Nanjung Ilgi (Yi Sunsin’s war diary) didn’t always contain content that fought against the enemy. In fact, most of the contents were ordinary.

*The sky was clear.*

*The Duke of Loyalty and Warfare went to do official business.*

If I wrote a ‘Destruction Diary’, my diary would roughly be like this.

*The sky was dark.*

*Kim Dokja was right.*

I rolled across the ground to avoid Myung Ilsang’s kick.

Myung Ilsang’s expression gradually became serious. He carefully looked at my Blade of Faith and sighed with relief.

“Phew... that’s right. It isn’t a real energy blade. Ahjussi, why are you acting like it is

real? You almost scared me?”

“Brat, you talk too much.”

It was a cold female voice. While I was stalling for time, Han Sooyoung made dozens of avatars and they ran towards him.

“Die!”

Han Sooyoung’s attacks poured onto the boy whose movements were blocked.

However, her attacks weren’t strong enough to harm Myung Ilsang’s body. Rather, Yoo Sangah was unable to do any damage due to the excessive number of avatars.

Myung Ilsang laughed as he was hit by Han Sooyoung’s small hand.

“Aren’t you also quite pretty? How old are you? A student?”

“Shut up, die!”

Myung Ilsang’s face was marred by the continuous hits.

“...What is wrong with everyone? What did I do wrong? If you see a nice-looking returnee like me, shouldn’t you welcome me with open arms? Should I get rid of all the monsters from now on?”

“What a mad dog!”

“Ah, were my words ridiculous? Wait a minute, perhaps you are...”

Myung Ilsang’s expression changed.

“You guys are from the Hunters Association! Right? Isn’t there normally this development? Aren’t they always the first one to show up with a returnee comes back?”

“This chuuni bastard... no, shit?”

[The third question has been resolved.]

[The fourth question has been resolved.]

[The fifth question has been resolved.]

[The third seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

Myung Ilsang smiled and nodded.

"You are from the Hunters Association."

It was really crazy. His momentum became even stronger. The surrounding avatars were destroyed by a powerful wave of energy emitted from Myung Ilsang's body.

Myung Ilsang burst out laughing. "Now, it is the munchkin's time!"

Han Sooyoung stepped back and glanced at me with an absurd expression. "What is with that bastard?"

I gasped with irritation. "Didn't I tell you not to answer him? You are just feeding that jerk."

"I didn't answer! I just swore."

"Just don't speak."

The point of the questions asked by the Disaster of Questions wasn't to get an answer. No matter what the answer, he would use it to strengthen his abilities.

Myung Ilsang kept speaking, "Then who should I kill first?"

But his words didn't last. It was because Yoo Sangah appeared behind him while emitting a fierce killing intent.

[Hermes Walking Method].

[Theseus' Resolution].

[Arachne's Web].

The system messages didn't pop up but I was able to recognize these skills. In a future scenario called Ragnarok, these skills were clearly described. They were the stigmas of the Olympus related constellations.

The surprised Myung Ilsang unleashed a series of Small Black Fire Cannons to keep Yoo Sangah in check.

However, Yoo Sangah rushed towards Myung Ilsang without caring about the black fire cannons.

“Something like this...?”

It was impossible.

As long as they didn't experience a special scenario event, there was no way for an incarnation to simultaneously possess the stigmas of various constellations.

It was a situation where I only had two stigmas. Then how could Yoo Sangah have such a large number of stigmas?

“Let's try it! Does it hurts?”

Sweat covered Yoo Sangah's forehead.

The thread of magic power kept expanding and shrinking. She stepped freely through the air. The dagger pierced without hesitation whenever there was a visible gap. The vitality inside her body was burning.

It was an extraordinary change in just two days...

At this moment, I sensed something. The stigmas of various constellations in one incarnation.

There obviously wasn't a single case in Ways of Survival. It didn't even apply to Prophet Anna Croft of the United States. Then Yoo Sangah...

“Dokja-ssi! Now!”

Yoo Sangah gave the signal and I supported her explosive attack with the Blade of Faith. Han Sooyoung also participated. Little by little, Myung Ilsang became dizzy from all the hands and feet.

His movements were delayed for a moment and my Blade of Faith aimed at the gap, cutting his shoulder and belly.

“Shit...!”

Blood flowed out. Myung Ilsang pulled back and chanted something.

[The character 'Myung Ilsang' has used Blink Lv. 1.]

Myung Ilsang's figure became blurry. My mind was in a hurry. He couldn't get away.

I aimed the blade at his waist. But his body faded away just as the blade hit. The only thing left was scattered blood.

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' lets out a sad sigh.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is going crazy from all the sweet potatoes.] *(Sweet potato is slang for when something is so frustrating that there is a stuffy sensation)*

[The constellation 'Abyssal Black Flame Dragon' is pointing a finger at your heart.]

[The excitement of some constellations has reached a critical level.]

Han Sooyoung shouted, "Shit, we missed him!"

"It's okay. He is injured so we can catch him soon."

[Some constellations have calmed down.]

"Yoo Sangah. You did really well... Yoo Sangah-ssi?"

There was no answer from Yoo Sangah. I headed over because I sensed something strange, where she was standing there stunned. Han Sooyoung asked,

"What's wrong with her?"

I belatedly realized. Theseus' Resolution was a skill that drew out all the power of the incarnation. The use of that skill allowed Yoo Sangah to deal with a monster for a while.

I looked at her for a moment before handing her over to Han Sooyoung.

"Giving another person to me? Am I a daycare centre?"

"We need to find the disaster quickly. Shouldn't you scatter more avatars?"

"I think I roughly know where he went."

“Please guide me.”

I couldn't miss that guy here. Han Sooyoung opened her mouth again, “I don't remember well... He becomes stronger every time he answers a question, right?”

“That's right. He is weak at first but becomes stronger every time he hears an answer. The returnees are too strong so there is a penalty when they fall into this world. Didn't you see the seals being released?”

“That boy... how many seals does he have?”

“Perhaps dozens. There will be no answer if he releases all of them.”

So far, five seals were released.

Fortunately, the additional scenarios of the dokkaebis hadn't come down yet.

If an additional scenario was released, many people would try to hunt that bastard and his seals would be released in a flash due to the many idiots answering his questions.

...The moment I was feeling relieved.

[Hrmm. Everyone, aren't you great? Despite the penalty, this is still a disaster. Only three people putting pressure on him...]

Han Sooyoung and I looked up at the air at the same time.

[By the way, aren't you being too greedy? As the old saying goes, you should share the beans.]

“Shit.”

Han Sooyoung cursed while messages arrived like they had been waiting.

[A new sub scenario has arrived!]

[The sub-scenario – SSS-grade Hunt has begun!]

I grasped the handle of Unbroken Faith. The situation was reaching the limit.



# Chapter 87

## A Reader's Fight (1)

The dokkaebi's voice rang out.

A group of low-grade dokkaebis were looking down like they were watching a burning house. Bihyung's figure could also be seen. He whistled when he met my eyes.

The dokkaebi in the middle of the crowd slowly opened his mouth and spoke to all of Seoul.

[Incarnations of Seoul! I have to tell you unfortunate news. Unfortunately, due to the actions of some people, one of the disasters has woken up in Gangdong-gu.]

The dokkaebi smiled as he met my eyes. This bastard?

[Ah, the sound of your sighs can be heard from here. I can see people who are already leaving Gangdong-gu. Haha, everyone. You should listen to the end. You will regret it later if you run away now. This disaster is definitely an opportunity for you.]

The dokkaebi spoke in a loud voice.

[Haven't you been having a hard time gathering coins? I know it all. Your life collapsed overnight and now strange existences are taking your coins. The people who were friends yesterday are suddenly stabbing you today. I'm glad I'm not you. Right now, the stars in the sky are probably tell you, "Hey, shake your ass a little better. I'll give you 100 coins."]

[A handful of constellations are giggling and laughing.]

The dokkaebi didn't laugh.

[I understand that you feel like shit and hate these jerks. Since the world is destroyed, you just want to live the way you want. You are very courageous but you feel a sense of helplessness when you realize that this world is divided in two. You feel disappointed when you realize that your constellation, which was barely obtained

after shaking your ass, is inferior to the constellation of a successful person. You feel angry about the unfair world. I'm well aware.]

[Some constellations oppose the dokkaebi's speech.]

Speaking of which, this dokkaebi wasn't ordinary. A low-grade dokkaebi with weak courage wouldn't be able to say this. Their channel would be ruined if there was a backlash from the constellations.

But this was only for minority channels. The bigger the channel, the more different the dokkaebi.

They knew the laws of the story. They couldn't tell a big story if they were only obsessed with subscriptions. A true storyteller must deal with the 'person' rather than the 'audience.'

I closely observed the dokkaebi who was still talking.

[I have prepared something for all of you. You who are unlucky, lucky or worked hard, you have a chance to become 'someone' overnight.]

The pointed horn on the crown. The leg shown through the white cap looked like a one-legged crow.

Wait a minute, surely this bastard wasn't... Dokgak?

At this moment, a huge screen appeared in the air. A bleeding boy fleeing was shown on the screen.

[Now, this boy you are seeing is a SSS-grade item walking around! Are you looking at him from head to toe? His name is Myung Ilsang. He was fortunate enough to be picked by the Star Stream to go to another world. Can you imagine it? Imagine being summoned to another dimension, suddenly receiving a powerful strength, spending a hot night with a cute elf girlfriend, saving the world and being loved as a warrior! That's right. This damn guy is the 'disaster' you have to catch today.]

It was somewhat strange.

I was wondering why a low-grade dokkaebi replaced the position of an intermediate dokkaebi. It was because he was the dokkaebi of a major channel.

[I can already hear your resentment. How the hell can you kill a SSS-grade? Haha, there is no need to worry. This guy currently has a penalty on him. His powers are sealed. He is strong but he is a treasure chest if you hit him all at once.]

“...He is creepy.” Han Sooyoung clicked her tongue. As a writer, she had already grasped the dokkaebi’s intentions.

If a disaster was called a disaster, no one would come. Then what if the disaster was a treasure chest?

[Your life hasn’t been ruined yet. Rather, I can say that you have good luck. The sub scenario that I offer now will be a great stepping stone to reverse your life. Now, the chance will only be for one day! Move immediately! Only those who move the quickest can become the owner of a SSS-grade item!]

As soon as they heard this, the incarnations scattered throughout Seoul would gather in Gangdong-gu.

[The sub scenario has been updated.]

+

[The sub-scenario – SSS-grade Hunt]

**Category:** Sub

**Difficulty:** B ~ ???

**Clear Conditions:** Get rid of the SSS-grade Myung Ilsang.

**Time Limit:** None

**Compensation:** 50,000 coins, ???

**Failure:** The fall of Seoul Dome.

+

The worst scenario was beginning.

Perhaps due to the failure result of the scenario shining red in the air, the huge reward that had never been seen before seemed insignificant.

“Quickly find him before everyone dies.”

“...Won’t he be affected by probability?”

“The probability is offset to some extent by the interest of the constellations.”

This was why dokkaebis preferred exciting scenarios. The stories that many constellations wanted offset the probabilities. Of course, it would be the responsibility of the dokkaebis if it failed, but this situation was different.

[The eyes of many constellations are shining.]

If it went as Dokgak planned, Seoul would end before the fifth scenario began. Han Sooyoung immediately used all her magic power to summon the avatars to search.

Five minutes passed before Han Sooyoung shouted, "I found him. He is 2km northwest from here!"

I ran along the road with Han Sooyoung and soon heard voices.

"Over here! There he is!"

"That brat went this way!"

There were already people flocking. Myung Ilsang was laughing as he was surrounded by a group of people.

"Uh... right. Here I am."

"You jerk! Are you having fun?"

"I'm having a lot of fun..."

"This fuc... hey! Kill him!"

It was surprising to see so many humans with an inferiority complex. Myung Ilsang avoided the swords waving through the air and asked, "Are you jealous and want me to send you to that other world?"

"What, you will send me there?"

"Of course. I will send you. You really want to go right?"

"If I can go then of course I want to go! It is better than this shitty world..."

Myung Ilsang nodded and extended his right arm towards the crowd.

[The eighth seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

[The ninth seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

.....

"Then go well. Although I have no idea if it is better than here."

"What?"

[The twelfth seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

[The thirteenth seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

[The fourteenth seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been released.]

.....

I felt a sense of hopelessness as I watched the messages appearing in the sky. It was too late.

"Because that place, I destroyed it."

[The character 'Myung Ilsang' has triggered 'Small Black Fire Cannon' Lv. 3!]

I grabbed Han Sooyoung and rushed behind a building.

A violet flash overturned the forest of buildings. Up to half a dozen high-rise buildings were hit and an entire street disappeared. Those who ran towards him disintegrated without leaving even bone dust behind.

A single entity that could be a disaster. This was the real strength of a returnee.

Han Sooyoung collapsed beside me. "Crazy... how do we defeat that?"

This was real fear. It was fear that caused our bodies to shake, rather than a skill. I spoke in an effort to resist it. "We can win."

"Don't speak nonsense and let's go back. We can never kill that guy."

"No. I can catch him. We will be better off if I kill him now."

[The character 'Han Sooyoung' has used 'Lie Detection Lv. 2']

[The character Han Sooyoung has confirmed that the statement is true.]

Han Sooyoung's eyes widened. "...Really? You couldn't kill him before."

"A person who only thinks about one thing, how can you live?" I was only speaking a half truth. In fact, the original plan was to defeat the Disaster of Questions and build up a second narrative.

The problem was that my plan was based on learning Way of the Wind.

"Does anyone else want to go to the other world? Raise your hands! I will send you!"

People screamed and ran away. Myung Ilsang was getting closer.

Then Yoo Jonghyuk's voice was heard from a translucent window.

*–There is no chance if you fight him head on.*

*–I know. But I still have to try it.*

*–Why did you make the situation like this?*

*–What?*

*–You had many chances. You could've killed Lee Seolhwa. Or if you had killed Antinus with Lycaon, you could've stopped the disaster.*

I couldn't give any excuses. I didn't kill Lee Seolhwa because of Yoo Jonghyuk and I didn't fight with Lycaon because I couldn't find a gap.

*–I'm not a regressor like you. I have to be careful in case of failure. If I don't think until the end...*

*–Careful? Don't be so cocky. Do you think you are a constellation? Knowing the future doesn't mean you can control everything.*

I felt like someone had punched me. Funnily enough, I thought that Yoo Jonghyuk's words were right.

[The exclusive skill, 'Fourth Wall' is in use.]

It was arrogance from knowing the future. I thought I could somehow make it even if

the story was distorted. Maybe that led to the current situation.

*–Then why don't you fight a little?*

I couldn't answer.

*–Don't use having no talent as an excuse. Not having the Way of the Wind doesn't mean you can't win.*

*–I can win?*

Yoo Jonghyuk was silent for a moment. The moment I was about to break the silence, Yoo Jonghyuk's voice continued.

*–My attribute is a 'pro gamer.' What is yours?*

*–What?*

*–I'm asking what can you do well?*

...What could I do well? There was a tickling feeling somewhere deep in my head. I felt that I was missing something important. But there was no time to think.

"I've found you! You haven't left yet."

Myung Ilsang whistled as he rounded the corner. Han Sooyoung groaned while I stepped back.

"...Uh?" The Hunters Association people from before?" Myung Ilsang laughed. "Great. I really wanted to meet you. Don't you know that my wonderful debut plans were ruined because of you?"

"..."

"I was trying to live well. Kill some S-grade incarnations, defeat the bad groups and love the pretty noonas. But what is this? I have completely become a villain. What should I do?"

I grasped my sword instead of answering.

[The stigma 'Song of the Sword Lv. 1' has been used.]

[Your sword is filled with the words left by the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare.]

{Today I am prepared for death. I pray to God in Heaven, may I destroy the enemy.}

The Duke of Loyalty and Warfare's words recorded in his war diary. Fortunately, the Duke of Loyalty and Warfare took my side this time.

[The stigma 'Song of the Sword' has been used.]

[The decision to die has improved your fighting power.]

I squeezed out all of my magic power at once.

[Blade of Faith is activated!]

The Blade of Faith burst out. I ran towards him. Myung Ilsang's hands lightly struck the Blade of Faith.

The splitting pain caused me to loosen my grip. It was only one blow but I could clearly know it. The overall stats of Myung Ilsang had already exceeded the limit of this scenario.

"What, you want to fight? Really? Didn't you just see me fighting?"

I looked at him laughing and was reminded of Ways of Survival. What could I do well? It was to 'read.'

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 1 has been activated!]

Then I started to hear his movements.

{Right shoulder.}

{Left thigh.}

The strikes still hit me despite me reading the moves. The fists surrounded by a purple light ruthlessly poured towards me.

{The belly, the belly, the belly, the belly...}



Blood poured from my mouth and my vision shook. I didn't give up. I thought and thought again.

[The character 'Myung Ilsang' admires your spirit.]

[Your understanding of the character 'Myung Ilsang' has increased.]

The information contained in Ways of Survival alone couldn't beat him. It was different from when I hunted the Dark Keeper. I couldn't fight despite calculating everything.

{Strong weak midway up.}

Too much information poured in at once, causing my dizziness to worsen. This was despite borrowing the power of the stigma. At this rate, the battle would be over in no time. I wiped the blood at my mouth and backed away.

...Did I have to use Ganpyeongui? I felt bitter that the last method I had was to borrow the power of the constellations. If I called a powerful constellation, I could probably win.

However, there was a burden of the probability after the last incident and most of all, I didn't like to owe the constellations.

Damn, I wish I had talent. It would be preferable if I could steal someone's talent.

...Eh? Wait. Steal? A dull shock filled my head. So far, my main weapon was 'information.' However, there were so much 'information' that I actually forgot some of them.

Pathetic. Why the hell did I forget about this skill? Wasn't this the first thing I should've done?

[The exclusive skill 'Bookmark' can now be activated.]

['Character Bookmarks' is activated.]

[Available Bookmark Slots: 4]

[Bringing up the list of available bookmarks.]

+

[People Listed in the Bookmark Slots]

1. The Delusion Demon Kim Namwoon (Understanding 35).
2. Steel Sword Lee Hyunsung (Understanding 75).

3. Demagogue Cheon Inho (Understanding 20).

4. Empty slot.

+

There was no change apart from the one additional slot.

I chose the empty slot.

+

[List of People who can be Registered on the Bookmarks]

1. Poisoner Lee Seolhwa (Understanding 10).

2. King of Beauty Min Jiwon (Understanding 25).

3. Tyrant King Jung Youngho (Understanding 10).

4. Hermit King of Shadows Han Donghoon (Understanding 30).

5. The Prophet Anna Croft (Understanding 1).

6. Armed Fortress Master Gong Pildu (Understanding 30)

.

.

+

As expected, Yoo Jonghyuk's name wasn't on the list. The main character was the main character. Special conditions must be met before he was unlocked.

In addition, people who weren't characters like Han Sooyoung, Yoo Sangah and Lee Gilyoung weren't on the list.

It didn't matter. They weren't the people I needed right now. I scrolled for a bit and finally found the person I wanted.

There he was. Why did I forget that he was also a 'character.' I didn't hesitate to put him in the fourth bookmark.

[The level of the Bookmark skill is low, shortening the activation time.]

[Activation Time: 30 minutes]

[Your understanding of the character is significant. You can select some of his skills to import.]

I chose a skill. The next moment, a silver storm emerged around my body. I felt the courage of a wolf nestle in my body.

Damn, I felt like a fool. What had I been trying to learn so far? I wasn't a regressor or a returnee.

[The character 'Prince Lycaon of the Imyuntar' has been registered on bookmark 4.]  
[The number four bookmark has been activated.]

I was a 'reader.'

[Way of the Wind Lv. 8 has been activated.]

And this was the way I fought.

# Chapter 88

## A Reader's Fight (2)

As I felt the refreshing wind wrap around my body, I recalled the sentences that appeared in Ways of Survival.

Han Sooyoung was summoning avatars when she noticed the skill I was going to use.

“What? I thought you didn’t learn this?”

“Step back.”

Way of the Wind.

{There is a gale in the right hand and a storm in the left hand. The Way of the Wind will be opened when the straight lines and the curves meet.}

The sentence that I couldn’t understand became a reality the moment I felt wind at my toes.

Myung Ilsang’s fist suddenly approached my nose.

The attack that should’ve hit was meaningless. The overwhelming power of this skill filled in my lacking stats. This was the secret technique of the Imyuntar.

Myung Ilsang’s eyes shone.

“...Huh? You sped up?”

I didn’t answer as I focused on enlightenment. From now on, it was a fight against time. The remaining time for Bookmark was 30 minutes.

“Aha, I understand. Is it the skill of those wolves?” Myung Ilsang laughed at me. “Did you receive a great enlightenment that allowed you to use this shitty skill?”

“ ... ”

“Do you know? I killed the king of those guys with my own hands.”

Of course I knew. I remembered the creatures of Chronos who died.

Prince Lycaon of the Imyuntar, Parasite Queen Antinus...

The fate of those who survived their destroyed world was to be used in the scenarios unfolding on another planet. I would be in the same situation as them if Earth was destroyed.

A Medium Black Fire Cannon shot from Myung Ilsang’s right hand.

{One wind will meet another wind to form ying and yang. Once again, one wind will meet another wind to form the principles of negative and positive.}

I used all my imagination to put these words into images.

Hot and cold wind swirled in front of me and the direction of the wind started to twist.

The black fire was deflected once it hit the wind and energy spread in every directions.

All ether attacks were propagated through a medium. If the root of the medium was dispersed, the attack would have no choice but to go back.

Myung Ilsang looked surprised. “...Pretty good. You must have some talent?”

Myung Ilsang once again started to flee.

[The character ‘Myung Ilsang’ has used Blink Lv. 4.]

It was another Blink. However, it wasn’t hard for me to pursue him. Once I closed my eyes and concentrated on the wind, I could read everything near me.

I ran along the street at a speed that matched Yoo Jonghyuk’s Red Phoenix Shunpo and found Myung Ilsang. He was grabbing people randomly and asking them questions.

I kicked off the steel frame of a building and flew towards Myung Ilsang. It was a blow that would crush bone but he stood up.

[The twenty-fourth seal of the returnee ‘Myung Ilsang’ has been released.]

His next seal was released by a hair's breadth.

"...It was ticklish?"

Myung Ilsang spoke in a playful manner. He believed that he would win anyway. His wounds were healed by the seal being released and as time went by, more of my magic power was being consumed.

"Hahaha, try to stop me!"

In fact, I couldn't kill him if I used Way of the Wind as a buff skill. If this alone could defeat the Disaster of Questions, Chronos wouldn't have perished in the first place.

I had to do 'it.' The problem was... someone needed to buy time for me to use this technique.

...Huh? Something suddenly fell from the sky diagonal to me. It looked like a descending hawk as it pierced through the air towards Myung Ilsang.

There was a terrible explosion and a small crater appeared. A familiar person was seen where Myung Ilsang was lying on the ground. I looked at the man with a wide mouth and muttered, "...Yoo Jonghyuk?"

Didn't this bastard say he would take two days to recover? I looked at the approaching Yoo Jonghyuk and reflexively stepped back. Surely he wasn't planning to hit me right now?

However, Yoo Jonghyuk stopped a few steps in front of me and turned around.

"Get started." Yoo Jonghyuk stood before me as if he knew what I was trying to do. "I'll block him."

Han Sooyoung muttered on my behalf from where she was lying nearby. "Ha, shit. As expected from the protagonist..."

But unlike her words, Yoo Jonghyuk appeared to be in a dangerous state. His body was still unsteady and the blood vessels on his body were still bulging.

Meanwhile, Myung Ilsang stood up from the crater, laughing while coughing up blood.

“Ah, it is a bit annoying...”

He wasn't badly damaged despite the impact. It was unbelievable that he was on the weak side of the 'returnees' who would appear.

Myung Ilsang ran forward and Yoo Jonghyuk met him.

Then I invoked Way of the Wind.

{Four winds meet and form a defense. Then another four winds are added, making it the Eight Trigrams. Therefore, wind is everywhere yet exists nowhere.}

It was my turn to use the verse that gave Lycaon enlightenment. The mysterious air wall in the shape of an octagon started to swirl.

It was a small dome of space. The tight seal choked me.

From now on, it was a fight against time. Yoo Jonghyuk flew back from a blow while Myung Ilsang's expression hardened. He finally realized that this wasn't a game.

“What...?!”

The next moment, all the air in the dome was removed. My ears became blocked and all sound disappeared. The wind blew terribly but the dome was as calm as the eye of a storm.

Myung Ilsang opened his mouth.

“...!”

“...?”

He moved his mouth several times but his voice wasn't heard. Sound wasn't possible because there was no medium.

He was in a complete vacuum. Due to the difference in air pressure, the air in my lungs momentarily escaped. I quickly sucked it back in.

Outside the dome, Han Sooyoung was shouting something.

[Exclusive skill, Omniscient Reader's Viewpoint stage 2 has been activated!]

{What is this?}

I could hear Myung Ilsang's thoughts.

{Why don't I have a voice? Magic?}

Myung Ilsang was shouting with confusion. It was natural. All returnees had a penalty. This was especially true for returnees who could quickly recover their original strength under certain conditions.

[The penalty of the Disaster of Questions is activated.]

[The power of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been weakened.]

[The twenty-fourth seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been locked.]

{Uwaaah, no!}

They had the condition of being 'weakened' as easily as they were 'strengthened.'

[The twenty-third seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been locked.]

Why did the Disaster of Questions keep asking questions? It was simple. His abilities would weaken if he didn't ask questions.

{Shit! Release this! Quickly release it!}

His fist hit the wall of air many times but the wall didn't break easily. In a space without a medium, the black flames didn't burn.

[The twenty-second seal of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' has been locked.]

A vacuum prison that could be made using Way of the Wind. This was the optimum strategy against the Disaster of Questions that I knew.

{Uwaaaaah!}

Myung Ilsang belatedly rushed towards me. He thought that the vacuum prison would be broken if I died but it wasn't the case. This was a place that I made.



I used Way of the Wind to avoid his attack and quickly reduced the area of the prison.

Once the wall shrank, I made a narrow passage and escaped outside the dome with Yoo Jonghyuk. Now Myung Ilsang was the only one left inside the dome.

{... You jerk!}

A returnee wasn't a returnee for nothing. The dome cracked a little bit under his power. I raised my hand and the wind filled in the weak spot. Then the size of the dome started to shrink rapidly.

Blood flowed from my nose due to my excessive concentration. My ultimate goal was to limit the vacuum prison to his body.

However, it wasn't easy to control. Shit, Yoo Jonghyuk had managed it easily. Why was this so difficult?

"Don't try to control it. You must lead the wind." Yoo Jonghyuk's voice was heard.

At that moment, I received enlightenment. Maybe it was my mistake to make a 'wall.' The important thing was to remove the medium around his body.

{U-Uwaaaah, uwaaaaah! I'm choking!}

Myung Ilsang frantically scratched at his neck, causing himself to bleed.

"...Pretty good. Although you still aren't very talented." Yoo Jonghyuk's voice was heard again.

Then Myung Ilsang attempted his last hurrah.

[The character 'Myung Ilsang' has used Great Black Fire Cannon Lv. 3.]

Myung Ilsang's right arm was surrounded by dark flames. To my surprise, the great flames shot through the dome of wind.

I fell down while protecting Yoo Jonghyuk's body. A dull impact filled my head. Myung Ilsang seemed to be squeezing out his remaining magic power as the black fire cannon continued.

But the wind wasn't still. Once the black fire cannon was fired through the dome, wind instantly filled up the spot again.

The last hurrah didn't change anything. The problem was that people were dying from the black flames.

Yoo Jonghyuk saw my face and said, "Kim Dokja, don't think about it. They wouldn't care if you died."

"There are people like that.'

But not everyone was like that. I got up and confronted the black flames.

The black flames were scattered and twisted by the power of the strongly rotating dome. A terrible pain followed. It was because I intercepted the majority of the black flames.

The black flames burned my skin and the sensation in my bones faded little by little.

I could do it. He wasn't strong right now. At this moment, I reached an area beyond my limits. As my senses became faint, my body was like the wind.

[A constellation who loves effort enjoys your pain.]

[A touch of talent sleeping in your soul has blossomed.]

I controlled the vacuum prison with my left hand while moving the wind with my right hand to dissipate the energy of the black flames. In a complete trance, I tasted new heights in Way of the Wind. The wind at my fingertips was creating a landscape I had never known before.

[The thickness of the exclusive skill 'Fourth Wall' has temporarily thinned.]

It was a strange feeling. This was how the 'characters' saw the world.

No matter how hard I read the text, I didn't know what to feel. I felt that a part of the narrative that was felt through the pages touching my fingertip, which I could never fully reach, was now completely understood.

Reading was different from understanding. Maybe I still didn't understand one percentage of this world yet.

Soon afterwards, I felt the power of Myung Ilsang's black flames weaken.

{Shit! Scum! Die! Diee!!}

The momentum of the black flames was rapidly declining. In addition, my magic power was still full.

It was a strange feeling. Even if I was in a trance, how could I have this much magic power left?

Behind me, Yoo Jonghyuk said, "...I will kill you."

...Somehow I had absorbed Yoo Jonghyuk's magic power.

Then after a while, Myung Ilsang's attacks ceased.

[All seals of the returnee 'Myung Ilsang' have been locked.]

Yoo Jonghyuk and I looked at each other.

[The exclusive skill 'Way of the Wind Lv. 8' has been released.]

The fear-stricken Myung Ilsang stared at us.

"C-Cough, cough...!"

I threw Unbroken Faith towards the man who was gasping for air and trying to run away.

"Kuheeok!"

He fell down with the blade in his back. He wouldn't be able to escape with Blink anymore. I ran over and grabbed his neck.

"...Hah, it is really frustrating not being able to speak. Have your questions finished?"

"Keeek..."

"I will kill you if you ask me a question right now. Don't ask anything."

Returnees. The most arrogant and brutal existences in Ways of Survival. Among the returnees, Myung Ilsang was one of the worst.

“Now I don’t want to hear one sound from you.”

*Peeok! Peeeok-!*

“Kuaaack!”

Myung Ilsang looked up at me like it was unfair. I hit him again and again until that fear was completely crushed. The beaten up Myung Ilsang barely managed to say, “I- It can’t be like this...”

I looked at this guy and remembered when he was a warrior.

{“I-I am a warrior? I am a real warrior? Really?”}

The 17 year old high school student, Myung Ilsang. The innocent boy who was chosen as a warrior to save the world and fell onto Chronos.

He obviously didn’t want to become like this. He didn’t want to be a murderer that wiped out life on a continent. But he did so.

“It is you who chose to become a disaster.”

Now he couldn’t change that fact.

[Your understanding of the character ‘Myung Ilsang’ has increased.]

Myung Ilsang’s face distorted. “I, obviously, p-protagonist, this, world...”

The man who wanted to become a protagonist but failed in the end. The real protagonist soon approached and slammed a blade into his head.

I looked into the eyes of the man killed by Yoo Jonghyuk. It was a futile death for the disaster that destroyed a world.

[You have won against a ‘returnee’ for the first time in the scenario!]

[Contributor: Kim Dokja, Yoo Jonghyuk]

[You have earned 40,000 coins as an achievement reward.]

[A new item will be added to your story.]

[The narrative 'Person who Opposes the Miracle' has been added.]

[You have obtained the possibility of a new stigma.]

# Chapter 89

## A Reader's Fight (3)

I looked at the system messages that appeared after Myung Ilsang's death. He left this world with just a few lines of messages.

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is satisfied.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' nods with slight discontent.]

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' is greatly pleased with your story]

[Someone has recommended your scenario to the Star Stream.]

[25,000 coins have been sponsored.]

I got up and slowly looked around.

Gangdong-gu was ruined. The disaster had only briefly passed but the ground was destroyed and the tall buildings collapsed.

On the road lit by the glow of the sunset, people covered with black dust crawled out. They were all people who ran here to obtain items. People who wanted to be the protagonist but had to remain as 'characters.'

Some people held their injuries while others wiped their tears. I could also see people bowing down to me. However, most people were lying on the ground as cold bodies.

I had read all of Ways of Survival. I understood the settings, the meaning of the explanations and finally thought that I had figured out the author's intentions. But in Ways of Survival, there were no sentences describing these deaths.

I turned and saw Yoo Jonghyuk watching the same scene as me. Perhaps Yoo Jonghyuk had seen this scene alone many times.

"Yoo Jonghyuk." He turned to look at me. I rolled the words around the tip of my tongue for a bit before shutting my mouth. "...It is nothing."

The scenarios would continue in the future and I would see this moment many times. I would encounter scenes that weren't expressed in the text several times.

Then a translucent window appeared in front of me and I heard an unexpected message.

[The dokkaebi 'Dokgak' has invited you to his channel.]

...Who was inviting me to a channel? I was confused for a moment but decided to ignore it. Then the message flashed again.

[The dokkaebi 'Dokgak' has invited you to his channel.]

I looked up at the air and saw one dokkaebi looking down at this side. It was a one-legged dokkaebi with an unpleasant smile. Bihyung was behind him with a terrible expression and looked between us. There was a gap even among dokkaebis of the same rank.

...Yes, I had a rough idea of this situation. I took a deep breath and deliberately spoke in a loud voice, "What? You won't give me the rewards?"

Dokgak's eyebrows twitched at my words. However, his mouth was still relaxed.

[Oh, of course. I'm sorry. I made a mistake.]

Dokgak was a scary dokkaebi. He wasn't silly like Bihyung but had a different constitution from the intermediate dokkaebis. Not just anyone could be a streamer of a major channel.

[The sub-scenario – SSS-grade Hunt has ended.]

[The compensation settlement will begin.]

[You have obtained 50,000 coins as compensation.]

I felt better when I received a huge number of coins. This scenario gave me 50,000 coins in one go. It was a great scenario.

Given the fact that sub scenarios were formed at the discretion of the dokkaebi, most of these coins would come from Dokgak's pocket. I thought his stomach would hurt but Dokgak was smiling softly.

[It is a great pleasure to see interesting stories. How can I not be amused?]

He muttered like he read my mind. Well, he had a big channel in Tokyo Dome so this

level of coins being bled wouldn't matter.

Why did he leave Japan now? Chances were high that great players like Oda Nobunaga or Miyamoto Musashi would still be active. Yes... was he full because the incarnations in his house were so busy?

"Then give me the extra compensation quickly. Is this all?"

[Ah, of course. I should naturally give it to you. You are the one who made this scenario interesting.]

I somewhat became angry at his sarcastic tone. If it wasn't for this bastard, the Disaster of Questions would've been a lot easier. Bihyung glanced at me from behind and communicated with me.

*-Hey... you know.*

However, Dokgak interrupted Bihyung before his words could be conveyed.

[Bihyung, prepare the compensation.]

Bihyung made a surprised and angry sound.

[Huh?]

[Prepare for compensation. Do I have to tell you twice?]

Look at this? Bihyung hesitated before opening his mouth again. [You are currently in charge of the sub scenario...]

[How interesting Bihyung. You dare act like this in front of the incarnations?]

A fierce aura started to crush Bihyung's body. The power of the dokkaebi depended on the size of the channel.

[It seems to be true that the size of your channel has grown lately.]

Bihyung shrank back as Dokgak kept talking.

[N-No! It is a misunderstanding!]



[You do know that the sixth scenario involves Korea and Japan together? Have you already forgotten?]

[I-I'm really sorry. I'll prepare it right away!]

[Get started right away.]

[Yes!]

I didn't feel good because Bihyung was the one managing my channel. To be honest, Bihyung and Dokgak's relationship seemed similar to how Song Minwoo bothered me during high school.

[Additional compensation settlement will begin.]

[You have acquired Parasite Species' Benefactor as a basic reward.]

[An additional selection reward exists.]

[You are the largest contributor to this scenario.]

[You have the first choice of additional compensation.]

I saw a translucent catalogue appear in front of me. Once again, it was quite useful to catch a disaster.

[Infinite Dimension Space Coat] – SSS-grade.

[Dark Fire Half-Gloves] – SSS-grade.

[Sylphid's Jump Boots] – SSS-grade.

Triple S-grade compensation items. I quickly looked at the options of the items.

The Infinite Dimension Space Coat had a special option of a 'inside pocket space' that allowed him to carry many things.

Dark Fire Half-Gloves greatly amplified skills with the dark and fire attributes.

Finally, Sylphid's Jump Boots allowed me to use the 'jump' effect three times a day.

They weren't star relics but it was enough to go to the 10th scenario. People might say, 'It is SSS-grade but it is only to the 10th scenario?' But the world of Ways of Survival was originally like this.

The item grade inflation was substantial in the world of Ways of Survival. The

difference in performance of the items obtained in the early stages to the middle stages was huge, despite having the same grade.

Of course, it wasn't necessary to throw away SSS-grade items now but special materials would be needed to transcend equipment.

This was why it was good to have star relics. Unlike other items, star relics didn't need transcendence. Once scenarios opened, the star relics would recover their inherent power that was beyond the constraints of probability.

[...Please choose a reward.] Bihyung told me with a grouchy expression. He was exhausted by the harassment.

At this moment, I heard Bihyung through the dokkaebi communication.

*–Personally, I recommend the Infinite Dimension Space Coat. There is one more hidden option. It is easier to transcend later.*

He was working as my manager. The quick-witted Dokgak was staring at Bihyung.

[Bihyung?]

[...Yes!]

[You must explain the items to the constellations. Have you forgotten?]

[I-I understand!]

Bihyung quickly started to explain the items to the constellations of Seoul Dome. I used this break to talk to Yoo Jonghyuk. "Yoo Jonghyuk, what are you going to choose?"

I had first choice but I decided to give it to Yoo Jonghyuk since I received his help.

...Of course, this was if Yoo Jonghyuk didn't hit me into the ground.

"Yoo Jonghyuk?"

He didn't answer. He was just staring at me.

"Did you pass out again?"

I waved my hand in front of his eyes several times but his pupils didn't change.

[The character Yoo Jonghyuk is currently using Recovery Hibernation Lv. 3.]

...Indeed, it was abnormal for him to move with that body. His body must be half broken to be able to use Recovery Hibernation. I couldn't just pick so I left a message with Midday Tryst. Han Sooyoung watched by my side and interrupted, "...Perhaps I should choose instead?"

"Only if you want to be hit by Yoo Jonghyuk later."

Han Sooyoung became silent in an instant. I spoke to Bihyung, "I will choose Infinite Dimension Space Coat."

However, the answer didn't come from Bihyung. Dokgak nodded and turned off the catalogue with a flick of his fingers.

[You have picked a good item. Then let's go the payment area.]

Payment area?

[The additional compensation can't be paid here.]

Look at this.

"Where are you going to take me?"

[I'll take you to my 'Dokkaebi Official Post'.]

The Dokkaebi Official Post. (Official post in Korean also means a horsehair cap worn by officials)

In folk tales, it was a type of clothing but here it was different. It was a 'room' that all dokkaebis had. It was a room that hid their true colours.

"That is a problem. Just give it to me here."

It was their unique space. I didn't know what to expect. As far as I knew, there was no procedure regarding moving to a Dokkaebi's Official Post in order to receive additional compensation.

It was obviously this guy's suggestion to go to his official post. Bihyung was watching me anxiously from next to him. I watched Dokgak with narrowed eyes.

[Hrmm... do you want me to cancel the additional compensation?"]

"Try it."

The scenario's compensation was a fixed rule of the Star Stream. Even a sub-scenario made with a dokkaebi's discretion couldn't take back an item that was given after the scenario was over.

A smile flashed on Dokgak's face.

[How interesting.]

*–This isn't a good idea.*

The dokkaebi communication opened.

As Dokgak opened his mouth, I heard him saying two different things.

[Kim Dokja. I've heard your story. You are so famous that the constellations of the lands beyond the peninsula know about you.]

*–I know about your contract with Dokkaebi Bihyung. But among the dokkaebis, it is possible to 'transfer incarnations.'*

[I've heard that you act proudly in front of dokkaebis and today I have discovered that the rumour isn't false.]

*–I will speak bluntly. Come to my channel. I am going to expand my channel to the Korean Peninsula. I will be happy to meet your desired items and conditions.*

Interesting. He made me a scouting proposal in this manner. The suggestion from Dokgak could be seen as moving from a team in the Asian League to a top team from La Liga.

It was an attractive offer. The problem was... the transfer. I knew this guy called 'Dokgak.'

“I might look like this but I’m actually really scared. I’m trembling while talking to you like this. So give me the item quickly.”

Dokgak’s expression hardened at my words.

[How interesting. You are humble.]

*–You are too arrogant. You will be humbled one day.*

“...What does that mean?”

*–Bihyung’s channel will soon disappear.*

A laugh emerged from Dokgak’s mouth.

[Then it can’t be helped. I originally wanted to announce this after paying the ‘compensation’ but I’m sorry.]

...An announcement? What announcement?

Dokgak looked up at the sky. He looked at the constellations emitting light and slowly opened his mouth. His voice seemed to echo in all of Seoul.

[I have regrettable news for the constellations who have watched the scenario with interest so far.]

The low-grade dokkaebis quickly withdrew from Bihyung’s vicinity. Bihyung made a bewildered expression. It wasn’t good whenever the dokkaebis acted like this.

[Unfortunately, among the channels operating in Seoul Dome, there is a channel that has been illegally manipulating the scenarios.]

[Many constellations are paying attention to ‘Dokgak’s words.’]

[It is the #BI-7623 channel of Dokkaebi Bihyung. As a result of a survey, the low-grade dokkaebis in Seoul Dome have concluded that ‘probability’ has been infringed due to excessive channel scenario manipulation.]

...Wait, what?

[On behalf of the low-grade dokkaebis of Seoul Dome, I am formally asking the Bureau to determine the ‘probability conformity’ of this channel.]

# Chapter 90

## A Reader's Fight (4)

Han Sooyoung asked with a dumbfounded expression.

“What? What does this mean? Why did he suddenly mention the probability?”

“He is arguing needlessly.”

“Arguing? Why?”

Why? Was it because I rejected his offer? Dokgak floated in the sky and reported to the Bureau.

The probability judgement...

I didn't think it would be used in this way. I expected the dokkaebis of other big channels to start a fight but I didn't expect it to be like this.

Bihyung's face turned red and he was tearful as he looked between me and Dokgak. It looked like tears would burst out as soon as he was touched.

*–W-What? What do I do now?*

*–Tell me honestly. Did he find out about our contract?*

Bihyung shook his head.

*–Did he notice you opening the Dokkaebi Bag?*

*–T-That can't be.*

*–Really?*

*–P-Probably...*

*–Well, don't panic yet. Even if that is the case, it isn't something that is worth asking for a 'probability conformity request.' In the first place, it isn't a violation of regulations.*

It was true. There was no precedent in which an incarnation made a 'stream contract' or could use the 'dokkaebi bag', so it wasn't a direct violation of Star Stream's regulations.

Bihyung belatedly nodded with relief.

*–Y-Yes. I understand.*

Seeing this childlike Bihyung, I didn't know if he was the dokkaebi or if I was. I looked at Dokgak and the low-grade dokkaebis again.

[The #BI-7623 channel manipulation has been reported.]

[The Bureau is currently discussing this issue.]

If I was right, the probability request would eventually be cancelled. Although the story would be different if Dokgak had 'evidence' for this...

He was hiding information and I had no way to figure out what it was. Then there was only one way left.

"Hey, can you stop stalling and quickly give me my reward? Don't you see that the constellations are becoming bored?"

[That is a problem. This is more important than the compensation payout.]

*–Have you changed your mind? If you agree with my proposal, I will get rid of all of this for you.*

I looked up at Dokgak. Yes, let's try a frontal confrontation.

"What are your concerns? Let me look. How is the channel I belong to illegally manipulating the scenario? Is there any evidence?"

I would find out what his evidence was if he had it. If he was bluffing, the situation would end immediately.

Dokgak smiled like he had been waiting.



[Do you really want to hear it? You will regret it.]

“Tell me.”

[This issue involves you, Kim Dokja.]

“...Me?”

At this moment, I had a thought.

Was it because I used future information from the text? But due to the filtering, this information shouldn't have spread to the constellations or the dokkaebis. Otherwise I would've already been caught in a probability storm...

[Do you see the screen?]

A huge screen appeared in the air. The screen showed videos of my recent battles. The first screen showed my conflict with Poisoner Lee Seolhwa.

[This is proof.

“...What is the proof?”

The screen just showed that I didn't kill Lee Seolhwa. Dokgak changed the screen.

[This is also proof.]

The second screen showed me watching the battle between Lycaon and Antinus. What was this...

[This is the third proof.]

On the third screen, I was attacking the Disaster of Questions, Myung Ilsang. It was a scene where Myung Ilsang continuously released his seals. Suddenly, my stomach felt pained.

[What do these screens have in common?]

I realized it at this moment. This guy wasn't talking to me right now.

[The constellations looking at the screens, do you have any idea?]

Everyone in the area became quiet.

[The fight against the Poisoner, the fight against Antinus and the fight against the Disaster of Questions. There is one thing these three fights have in common.]

Then the screen kept changing.

[He actually had a chance to kill the Poisoner and stop the disaster.]

His finger pointed to the Poisoner.

[He could stop the disaster by killing Antinus.]

Then he pointed to Antinus.

[He could've stopped the Disaster of Questions before the seals were released.]

He pointed to Myung Ilsang then he pointed towards me.

[But he 'deliberately' didn't do it.]

"Wait! You are now...!"

Now I noticed what Dokgak was trying to do. Goosebumps covered my entire body.

I see. This was what the dokkaebi was planning.

[Constellations. Incarnation Kim Dokja colluded with the channel's streamer, 'Bihyung.' He deliberately concealed his strength and manipulated the development of the scenario. He made the scenarios harder for malicious purposes.]

Then the final screen appeared. It showed me using Way of the Wind to stop Myung Ilsang.

[He did this to 'direct' the last catharsis.]

This bastard, he didn't intend to ask for the 'probability conformity request' from the beginning.

Dokgak...

This was his real purpose.

[It is just to rip off coins from you.]

It was the end of Bihyung's channel.

[Some constellations are silent.]

The evidence that Dokgak exposed didn't violate the terms of the 'probability conformity judgment.' Dokkaebis controlling incarnations to make a scenario interesting wasn't uncommon.

The problem was the constellations who hated it. The moment they thought I wasn't serious about the scenario, the constellations would lose interest.

It was like alienating them from the play. The moment the fourth wall between the audience and the character collapsed, the audience would cool off straight away.

This was what Dokgak aimed for.

[The constellation Bald General of Justice's mouth is gaping open.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is chuckling.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' shrugs like it is fine.]

Some constellations were astonished, some constellations had no idea and some constellations were silent.

The problem was the other constellations.

[Some constellations have left the channel.]

[The constellations questioning the fairness of the channel has left the channel.]

[Some constellations are requesting coin refunds from the channel.]

The constellations left and Bihyung's channel started to shrink.

[The size of the channel is reduced.]

The messages continuously popped up. Bihyung's pale body was becoming smaller.

His horns were shrinking.

I eventually sighed. “The channel is dead.”

There was only one way left. I looked at the dwindling number of constellations and spoke to Dokgak.

“I understand so give me the compensation when you are done talking. I will accept your offer.”

Dokgak’s lips curved upwards.

*–You are smart.*

Bihyung’s eyes grew wider with disbelief.

[Y-You...!]

“Don’t look at me like that. It can’t be helped.” I shrugged while speaking in a loud voice.

Bihyung’s lips trembled from the betrayal. This child was scared.

*–Bihyung, do you trust me?*

*–What...*

*–Trust me this once. Aren’t you already ruined?*

I finished the communication and spoke to Dokgak.

“Start moving.”

[Good. Then let’s have a sweet rewards time.]

Dokgak flicked his fingers and the surrounding landscape disappeared. We reappeared in a room reminiscent of a luxury hotel suite.

...This was his ‘official post’? I looked around a bit nervously. Low tables and chairs suitable for a dokkaebi were placed over luxurious rugs. There was a wide variety of

alcohol on one side. Later I realized that it was a suitable setting for a dokkaebi who liked to drink.

I finished looking around and approached the window. The landscape outside was...

Oh my god. A darkness with no end filled my vision.

Glittering stars flowed in the darkness of the grand universe. It was a superb vision of the grand universe like endless jewels. The constellations repeated their orbits and rotations, each one part of the huge galaxy.

It was funny that at his moment, I was purely impressed. This was the Star Stream. It was the flow of the great stars that governed all scenarios. Every story began here.

"It is great." I looked back and saw Dokgak standing there. "Sometimes I just stare blankly at this landscape. I never get tired of this sight."

"You are now..."

"Ah, are you surprised? This is my 'real' voice."

It was the first time I heard the dokkaebi's voice. Previously it was always heard through a broadcast. In other words, the sight before me was Dokgak's real 'body.' Dokgak's eyes shone.

"What are you thinking about?" I asked.

"What do you think? Ah, do you think I'll kill you?" He burst out laughing. "You know that is impossible."

"I'm not crazy enough to fight against a dokkaebi either."

"I like it. Then let's start the contract."

Dokgak flicked his fingers and a dokkaebi with a contract appeared before him. It was Bihyung. He was tied up by the system and stared at me with reproachful eyes.

"I brought Bihyung as a notary. In any case, you have to break the contract with him to form a contract with me. The cost of the destruction will be covered by Bihyung."

I was a bit surprised. This guy, he knew about my contract with Bihyung. It meant he knew from the beginning that I was a good person to attract the ‘find an incarnation’ group.

I pretended to be calm. “Do as you like. I don’t care.”

“It is good that the story is fast. Would you like to check the contract? It is also my first time making such a contract.”

I read the contract. Needless to say, the contract was completely full of adverse conditions for me. Donations would be distributed 5:5. There were also some conditions that bound my freedom. Even now, I was the ‘gap’ instead of the ‘eul.’

Dokgak laughed. “How about it? This is the industry average but I can make some adjustments.”

It sounded like the industry average. Bihyung also tried a similar contract in the beginning.

I nodded and said, “Well, it isn’t bad. But before I sign the contract, I have a suggestion.”

“Suggestion? What is it?”

“Isn’t it a shame if I’m the only one moving channels? Surely you won’t be satisfied with just one thing? There are some strong constellations in my channel.”

“Hoh? Who are they?”

“Prisoner of the Golden Headband, Abyssal Black Flame Dragon, Demon-like Judge of Fire...”

Dokgak looked surprised at each modifier.

“Prisoner of the Golden Headband? I didn’t think you would have such constellations... Bihyung, you are quite good.”

Bihyung hissed through his gag.

I continued speaking. This was the most important part.

“Honestly, I don’t want to leave these constellations behind in this channel. Therefore, I want you to build a bridge so that the constellations can move channels with me.”

# Chapter 91

## A Reader's Fight (5)

[The constellation 'Demon-like Judge of Fire' will judge your sincerity.]

[The constellation 'Secretive Plotter' is somewhat annoyed.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' is actively giving off annoyance.]

[The constellation 'Prisoner of the Golden Headband' asks if you really want to move channels.]

Dokgak smiled like he was interested.

"A bridge?"

"Connect your channel to me."

"Then isn't it like a duplicated connection?"

"It doesn't matter. You will be able to move channels through me without having to struggle with the constellations."

"Hmmm. That's true. Very interesting."

"There is also something I'm curious about."

"Curious about?"

"What types of constellations are in the channel I will contract with? I'm just wondering what a big channel looks like since I've only been in a small channel like this. I would like to see it in advance. Is it okay?"

I deliberately spoke towards Bihyung. Bihyung's expression became hurt in real time. A smile of satisfactory appeared on Dokgak's face.

"Bihyung, you signed with a really good incarnation. I really think so."

Dokgak's hands moved through the air and he started to manipulate the system.



“Good. Then let’s show you the air of a big city.”

The next moment, it felt like a new cord was stuck in my body. There was a definite connection that seemed to lead somewhere.

I slowly blinked and felt countless gazes on me. One, two, three... all the hairs on my body rose. It was quite different from Bihyung’s channel. I could feel their presences just from their eyes.

Amazing. This was the channel of a dokkaebi who dominated Tokyo Dome?

“How is it? There is a new league for you to play in.”

It seemed that there weren’t just Japanese constellations. Did this jerk had fixed subscriptions on other continents or worlds? If I worked in such a place, how many coins could I get at once? To be honest, I couldn’t even guess.

I murmured, “Great. Isn’t this really big?”

“Then the contract...”

“Before that, I want to say hello for a moment. Is that okay?”

“...Please do so.”

Dokgak made a disgruntled expression but he eventually allowed it. I started talking with my eyes closed. “Constellations of Tokyo Dome. Can you hear me?”

[Some of the constellations who hate the Korean peninsula are looking at you.]

“I’m sure that some of you have heard my story. I am Kim Dokja, the one who smashed the Absolute Throne and became the king of a kingless world. Please note that I have no sponsor... um, well. That’s correct. I hope to get along with you in the future.”

[The constellations of Tokyo Dome are listening to you.]

I only gave a brief introduction and some constellations were already starting to approach me indirectly.

Good. The start wasn’t bad?

“By the way. As a memorial to my channel, I will do a small event. I mean, a joint event between South Korea and Japan... If you are curious, please connect to #BI-7623 right now. I will draw tickets for the early constellations and give coins—”

Then the channel link was disconnected. I opened my eyes and saw Dokgak staring at me as he asked, “What the hell are you doing now?”

“What? It is an event.”

“What are you thinking? Do you want to die? The constellations in my channel don’t play in such shallow waters...”

I would gladly give him a surprise because he cut me off at the point where people were feeling curious. Then Dokgak’s body started to slowly change.

“Wait, constellations. Where are you going?”

The flow was changing. Constellations started pouring into Bihyung’s channel little by little.

[A number of constellations have entered channel #BI-7623.]

[The channel level has risen.]

I smiled widely. “A lot of you came. Thank you. Are you here for the event?”

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ is annoyed at the appearance of these constellations.]

[The constellation ‘Maritime War God’ resents the appearance of hostile constellations.]

“Wait, don’t fight. I didn’t call you here to fight.”

[The constellation who likes Murasama is urging you to proceed with the coin lottery.]  
[Some constellations are asking about the coin event.]

“Don’t be in a hurry. I’ll do it in a bit. Think about it. Is it so important to get a coin or two? What is the point if you don’t have incarnations to spend the coins on? Go slowly, slowly.”

[Some constellations are looking at you with disgruntled eyes.]

“You may have heard of this but I’ll tell you again. I am Kim Dokja and I don’t have a sponsor. I won the war between kings and prevented a disaster before it began. There are probably few incarnations stronger than me if you look around the world. There will be none with no sponsor. By the way... it will be hard to last until the end.”

Dokgak started to turn pale as he noticed my intentions.

“Wait! You...!”

I laughed at Dokgak. A production? Yes, I would show him what a real ‘production’ was.

“Seoul Dome is now ahead of the fifth scenario. If you are smart, you will know what that means. Yes, that’s right. There will soon be an event that you will like.”

Now there was less than a week until the start of the scenario. Before the entire disaster scenario started, a special event would be hosted. A banquet for all the constellations in the Star Stream. Soon, the second Sponsor Selection would start.

I continued speaking. “In celebration, I would like to do a surprise event. If the number of subscriptions to this channel reaches 10,000 on the day of the Sponsor Selection...”

[The constellation ‘Prisoner of the Golden Headband’ is gulping.]

“I will make one of the constellations in this channel my partner.”

[The constellation Secretive Plotter is looking at you with interest.]

“It doesn’t matter what gender, race or world you originated from. It doesn’t matter if you are strong or weak, famous or not famous. Anything is okay. What I am looking for is passion. I hope you have the passion to send the end of this damn story with me.”

[The constellation ‘Bald General of Justice’ wipes his head.]

“Whoever is good. I will be waiting for you. 10,000 viewers. Do you remember? Please convey it to other people properly.”

“W-Wait a minute! Wait! Just wait!”

Dokgak cried out but it was already too late. There was a wicked voice and

unstoppable channel messages. I was dizzy from the indirect messages that came from everywhere.

Some time passed.

Cold anger rose on Dokgak's face. He made a decision and raised his hand towards me. "Incarnation Kim Dokja. You will die here."

Yes, I thought he would react like this. I laughed while pretending to be calm. "There are currently many constellations watching. Aren't you afraid of the storm?"

"Don't underestimate the master of Tokyo Dome."

There was no patience left in Dokgak's furious face. Damn.

"Do you think I can't deal with the probabilities caused by killing a bug like you?"

Dokgak's fingers moved. It was a gesture like he was flicking away a bug. Powerful sparks appeared around me. It was the 'balloon burst' that was Dokgak's specialty. The currents would cause my body to burst like a balloon. My swollen intestines would scatter as fragments and all the pieces that made up my body would become dust scattered into the universe.

This was what originally should've happened.

"...What is this?"

He tried again. Dokgak flicked his fingers two more times. However, there was no change. Not long afterwards, even the sparks disappeared.

"T-This is..." The confused Dokgak stared at his fingers. However, he still didn't understand. The problem wasn't his fingers.

There was a chill and a enormous shadow appeared behind me, darkening my vision.

"Hey. Dokkaebi."

A voice was suddenly heard. I instinctively knew. The owner of this voice was now protecting me. It was natural when thinking about it. One a dokkaebi who used the system could prevent the use of the system.

“Is it fun to show off your power?” It was the first time I heard Bihyung’s real voice.

The astonished Dokgak stuttered, “Uh, how did you get Character Redemption...?”

“Ah, this? Didn’t you just give me a hard time because of your strength?”

Dokgak’s face turned red. Belated rage filled his face. “You are at best a low-grade dokkaebi... Bihyung! What do you mean by this rudeness?”

“Low-grade? You are also low-grade despite your number of subscribers.”

“I didn’t get a promotion on purpose. Do you dare anger me, the master of Tokyo Dome?”

“Tokyo Dome? Good, Tokyo Dome. Are there many good constellations left there?”

Bihyung moved from behind me towards Dokgak. “By the way, were you this small?”

Their appearance looked the same but now Bihyung was several times larger than Dokgak.

Bihyung’s giant shadow proved it. Once again, a dokkaebi’s power increased with their number of subscribers.

The fear stricken Dokgak staggered back. “H-How...?”

“You were talking very well earlier. What? I was illegally manipulating the scenario?” A black arm emerged from Bihyung’s shadow and grabbed Dokgak’s neck, raising him into the air. “The jerk who steals the incarnations of others... who taught you business ethics?”

“U-Uh. You absolutely won’t be safe if you do this...!”

“What the fuck!” Bihyung’s right arm swelled enormously. “Go to Andromeda and find your concept!”

The shadow’s fist burst through the shield on the ceiling and Dokgak flew to the far side of the universe.

He wouldn’t die because he was a dokkaebi but he would be hit hard for a while.

Bihyung let out a breath like he was relieved.

By the way, I nearly died. I sighed with relief and approached Bihyung. The channel had just grown but Bihyung seemed strange. We looked at each other and I was met with Bihyung's confused eyes.

I couldn't tell if he was laughing or crying. Perhaps this was the expression that dokkaebis made when they were really happy.

"Do you know what I am seeing right now?"

I didn't know but I had an idea. It probably wasn't much different from what I'm seeing.

[The channel level has risen.]

[The channel level has risen.]

[The channel level has risen.]

.

.

.

[A constellation who likes the Korean peninsula wants to be your sponsor.]

[A constellation who wants historical reconciliation wants to be your sponsor.]

[A constellation who likes to change gender wonders about your heart.]

[A constellation that enjoys subculture is interested in you.]

The endless messages started to fill the ears of me and Bihyung. Now the stage would expand to the world.



PDF by: traitorAIZEN